

苏小暖 著

邪王追妻：

# 废材逆天小姐

ATIME  
WANGJIE



## Chapter 401 – Amethyst Fish Palace (23)

---

Beichen Ying was just staring at Nangong's hand, trying to time when he was about to take ruthless action, so that he would then be ready to rush over and save Su Luo. However at this time, Nangong Liuyun's action nearly toppled more than ten years of the Nangong he recognized.

Making him deeply doubt that for this past decade or so, whether he had lived in vain.

He saw that not only was Nangong Liuyun not offended, on the contrary, he reached out to pinch the bulging little meatball-like cheeks on Su Luo's face. His smiling expression was devilishly charming, "You actually dared to pinch this king, for you to grow this ability, tsk."

Unexpectedly, Nangong hasn't gotten angry, this was greatly beyond and contrary to the three childhood friends' expectations.

The three childhood friends looked at each other in disbelief, finally, they could only silently cast their gazes onto Su Luo's body. They left an extremely worshipful and meaningful gaze on her face.

Today's matter, there was only her, if it changed to another person, their corpse would have already been horizontal at the scene.

However, they really need to reassess this girl's place in Nangong's heart. Before, although they already regarded her as very important, yet, with the facts as proof of her repeatedly visiting Nangong's bottom line while Nangong continued to indulge her...It could clearly be seen that they still underestimated her.

Nangong indifferently swept them a glance.

Consequently, the three people neatly and with identical movements, turned their gazes to the spectacle on the program up ahead.

Now, the people at the crown prince's side swarmed around him, helping the crown prince to extinguish the crowd of tiny flames.

However, the marks were still there.

The brocade robe on the crown prince's body was dark and swarthy, in addition, there were lots of small holes from being engulfed by the tongues of the flame. His attire was worse than the tattered rags worn by a beggar.

The most eye-catching thing was his right hand.

Before, that hand was still holding the Amethyst Crystal Fish which he flaunted, but now, his right hand had been blown flying by that fake Amethyst Crystal Fish.

Although the blood had already been stopped, there were several missing and broken off fingers. It was a ghostly sight to behold, and the bare bones were frightening.

The crown prince's left hand held his right wrist as he walked towards where Nangong Liuyun was standing while panting with rage. He snarled loudly at him, full of rage: "Is it because you already knew earlier that there was a problem with this purple fish? Am I right?!"

Although he used a question, the crown prince's tone however, was basically assertion, firm in the belief that Nangong Liuyun had already known earlier.

Nangong Liuyun glanced at him once with indifference, his gaze sweeping towards Beichen Ying.

Beichen Ying smiling happily and took a step to stand out, and with a laughing-out-loud and smiling expression: "Hey, Your Highness the crown prince, are you here to settle your debt? You are able to so quickly gather together one thousand five hundred green-colored crystal stones?"

Originally, the crown prince was in a towering rage, but then he suddenly felt his chest becoming suffocated—

He stared blankly with a stupefied expression at Beichen Ying for a long time before recovering his senses.

Heavens—Just a moment ago, he actually stupidly made a bet with

**Nangong Liuyun that the Amethyst Crystal Fish was real. The stake was one thousand five hundred green-colored crystal stones!**

**Recalling this matter, the crown prince's face immediately turned green. His mouth continued to open and shut for several times, unable to say a word.**

**Beichen Ying, smiling happily, patted his shoulder: "Not urgent, not urgent, in any case, the receipt is present, after we go back, it's still not too late to pay it back. Rest assured, Nangong won't press you right now, however...Three thousand green-colored crystal stones oh, my crown prince."**

**The crown prince only felt his forehead echoing with a buzzing sound, suddenly, for a period of time, both the sky and earth started to spin, and his mind was even more of a blank space.**

**He wished he could immediately pass out, treating this as if nothing ever happened.**

**But even if he were to pass out, the green-colored crystal stones he owed must still be returned.**

**Beichen Ying closely watched him with a narrow smile. Lan Xuan and Anye Ming also raised an eyebrow and watched him with a faint smile. Their gazes made the crown prince flee in a panic state from being stuck in a dilemma.**

**Seeing the crown prince staggering along while fleeing, Beichen Ying placed both hands on his waist and started to laugh uproariously.**

## Chapter 402 – Amethyst Fish Palace (24)

---

When the crown prince heard his laugh that was full of evil intent, he ran even faster.

The crown prince brought along a group of people and rushed towards that road.

The nine paths up ahead, without interacting with the Amethyst Crystal Fish, the risks for any of the paths were all the same to him.

Since the risk was all the same, then with everyone going together, it would be better than one person fighting on alone.

After the crown prince and Li Aotian talked it over, they decided to walk through the first road. The surrounding crowd of people were all standing around in a circle, watching His Highness Prince Jin impatiently, hoping to follow behind him.

Nangong Liuyun merely crooned out an indifferent sentence: “This king will be the last to go.”

The implication was that he refused to let people form a group to follow him.

Nobody was an idiot, since His Highness Prince Jin clearly said he wouldn't allow anyone to follow him, if you followed him, then with his emotionless, savage temper, if you weren't killed by the magical beasts along the way, you would be killed by His Highness Prince Jin. Therefore, this method would not work.

Everyone, with no other alternative, could only unwillingly and with uncertainty, followed behind the crown prince and walked towards the first passageway.

The first passageway, a lot of people often wouldn't dare to select it, but the

crown prince actually chose it.

This was the so-called taking the road contrary to the expected direction, this was probably what he was thinking.

The Jade Lake's Fairy stood in the distance, looking towards Su Luo's direction from the distance. Seeing Nangong Liuyun and Su Luo's flirtatious and close manner, a malicious ray of light flashed through her eyes.

Li Aotian gave her a tug, his tone was coldly cruel: "Let's go, there is no use in watching some more."

No matter how she gazed at him with deep emotions, third senior brother wouldn't bother to glance at her.

Li Yaoyao reluctantly took back her gaze and said with a frown: "Do we really need to follow after that moron and go with him?"

Don't know if it was because of superstition, but ever since they joined the crown prince on the same path, afterwards, things of bad luck immediately came following them. It really had been terrible luck.

Li Aotian's tone was coldly indifferent: "To have a free shield, not using it would be a waste. Let's go, stop looking, his heart has changed. His heart doesn't have you anymore, no matter what you do, it is useless."

The Jade Lake's Fairy's complexion suddenly changed, a malevolent expression flashed through her eyes, raising her voice to say: "No! Third senior brother is mine! He must be mine!"

Li Aotian, seeing her so stirred up, was a little distracted. Then in his heart, he sighed again for this younger sister.

"Second older brother." The Jade Lake's Fairy's tone echoed faintly, light as wind. If you didn't listen carefully, it would be hard to hear clearly. One could hear the touch of iron and the murderous bloody intent in her dark tone: "Help me kill her!"

This her, who it indicated, Li Aotian was naturally very clear about.

Li Aotian not only didn't refuse, but instead heavily nodded his head: "Yao Yao, you should rest assured, that that girl would cheat you like this, how could

second older brother allow her to live on this earth?”

The corner of Jade Lake's Fairy's mouth hooked into a sneer, glancing back, she looked deeply at Su Luo. She then turned and left with confidence and ease.

Second older brother had always been good at keeping his words, Su Luo, you just wait to die!

It was a pity that Su Luo and them completely didn't hear Li Aotian's words. Now, all the surrounding people were gone.

Beichen Ying, in a somewhat puzzled manner, looked at Nangong Liuyun: “We should start walking right? Which passageway should we take?” He had already looked left and right, but felt that every road was the same. If you asked him to choose, he would absolutely do the same as the crown prince and leave it completely to luck.

The corner of Nangong Liuyun's mouth lifted into a demonically charming and alluring smile, he raised an eyebrow and looked at Su Luo.

Su Luo concentrated her thoughts, her mind moved, and an exquisite, small and delicate purple colored goldfish appeared in the center of her palm that she just spread open.

Her fair-as-jade palm, had a small, delicate, cute Amethyst Crystal Fish reclining calmly and not moving in it. That little purple fish seemed to be alive, with its two black eyes blinking.

“Amethyst Crystal Fish!” Beichen Ying bounced over in a flash with both eyes shining.

## Chapter 403 – Amethyst Fish Palace (25)

---

“It can’t be the real Amethyst Crystal Fish!” Lan Xuan also came over immediately after, with a mystified expression across his entire face.

“This...seems to be the real Amethyst Crystal Fish.” Anye Ming examined it for quite a while, before unhurriedly arriving at a conclusion. Afterwards, he looked at Su Luo with a complex expression.

“What ‘seems like it’? Of course it is the real one.” Nangong Liuyun cast them a glance, showing his dissatisfaction with their doubt.

It seemed as if Beichen Ying thought of something, immediately, he was extremely happy: “Well, as it turns out, you already knew earlier that the real Amethyst Crystal Fish was in sister-in-law’s hands. Therefore, secure in your knowledge, you then went to extort the crown prince, isn’t it so?”

“Isn’t it obvious?” Nangong Liuyun calmly and as if it should rightfully be so, raised an eyebrow.

“The two of you...” Beichen Ying, full of a righteous sense of justice, criticized: “One used Amethyst Thorned fish to defraud one thousand five hundred green-colored crystals stones from the crown prince before, and the other one used the Amethyst Crystal Fish to defraud another one thousand five hundred green-colored crystal stones from the crown prince. You guys, you guys are still really... if not from the same family, then won’t enter the same family’s door (1). A match made in heaven and truly a pair of super two-faced people!”

Nangong Liuyun expressed that Beichen Ying’s last sentence touched deeply his desires, therefore, with regards to his criticism, he accepted all of it. He also satisfiedly nodded his head: “What you said is very good.”

Lan Xuan again moved closer with misgivings across his entire face: “But how could the Amethyst Crystal Fish be in sister-in-law’s hands? Weren’t all the good

stone rooms snatched away by everyone else? Weren't you guys the last ones to arrive?"

Beichen Ying, Anye Ming, one by one, also expressed their puzzlement.

Nangong Liuyun, with one hand hugging Su Luo's slender shoulder, raised an eyebrow with self-satisfaction: "Again, so what?"

'Again, so what?' Beichen Ying stammered while saying: "That means it was practically impossible for you guys to obtain the Amethyst Crystal Fish ah ——"From previous years, the good room numbers were all written down by everyone ah.

Nangong Liuyun faintly smiled, pointed to Su Luo: "Impossible or not, ask my family's little Luo Luo."

"Hiss——" Beichen Ying, the three of them, inhaled a breath of cold air: "This Amethyst Crystal Fish...was obtained by sister-in-law?"

Nangong Liuyun was more proud than if he had gotten it himself. Very smugly, he raised his chin to croon: "That is only natural, also not seeing whose it is."

Su Luo crossly rolled her eyes at him: "Regardless of whose it is, it is still not your family's wife."

Beichen Ying and the three of them, with a 'pfft' sound, let out their laughter.

Nangong Liuyun peevishly pinched the tip of Su Luo's nose: "This girl, will anything happen if you don't undermine me? Just like this, won't give this king some face."

Beichen Ying and the three of them really held Su Luo in esteem, simply admiring her to the point of prostrating themselves in adulation.

Like Nangong, this kind of man, there were a countless number of women who, after bathing clean, would line up waiting to sleep with him. Whatever looks he wanted in a woman, how could he not have?

However, contrary to reason, he just hanged himself on Su Luo's tree to die, and not only was he perfectly happy to do so, he was still complacent about it.

Really didn't know what to say to him that would be good. This really made them, his childhood friends, fume with rage between gritted teeth.

Su Luo pushed Nangong Liuyun away: “Don’t disturb me, I’m doing something serious here.”

Once this was said, everyone became silent. With a burning pair of eyes, they stared at that little purple fish in Su Luo’s palm. They were waiting for it to tell them the correct path to take.

Su Luo closed her pair of eyes tightly, and carefully placated the purple fish full of spirit.

The little purple fish seemed to have been lonely for a long time, with great difficulty, a master with an aura that it was very fond of appeared, and suddenly, it was extremely excited. It talked non-stop...

Su Luo’s mind was forced to accept innumerable bits of information, a lot of it was very ancient news....

All the information spun around making her dizzy, it was quite a while before the excited little purple fish stopped. In the moment it took a break, Su Luo took advantage of the gap to ask which path they ought to take.

*1) If not from the same family, then won’t enter the same family’s door: This is an Chinese idiom that is used to describe a pair of very compatible couples. A similar but more general English saying is that birds of a feather flock together.*

## Chapter 404 – Amethyst Fish Palace (26)

---

The little purple fish, not without some scorn, swept a glance at Su Luo, and in passing, pointed to the road in the middle, that was to say, the fifth path:

“Naturally it’s there, does it even need to be said?”

Okay, the Su Luo being looked down upon opened her eyes. Her gaze encountered a group of male eyes that were full of hope.

Su Luo lifted her hand very much like a queen: “Follow me!”

Consequently, a party of four youngsters, every one of them young masters from influential aristocratic families, where if their names were spoken outside could make the ground of Eastern Ling Empire shake three times. All of them now, in a humble little brother manner, slavishly followed behind Su Luo, giving a ‘yes Ma’am’ following blindly appearance.

Beichen Ying very quickly moved closer: “Sister-in-law, was this Amethyst Crystal Fish really found by you?”

“Then who else?” Su Luo irritatedly looked at him once.

“How did you finally find it?” Beichen Ying was extremely curious.

They rushed ahead so fast, everyone of them had gotten hold of a good room, so why didn’t they get as good a treatment as her?

Su Luo’s explanation, in his ears, made him even more depressed.

“Just like that we walked in and got it.” Su Luo very innocently said: “Oh, that’s right, at that time, the Jade Lake’s Fairy was just dithering in front of the door. After she abandoned it, then we were able to enter that room.”

Beichen Ying felt somewhat dizzy for a moment.

This luck was great to what extent, that she could snatch the treasure from the

hand of a rival in love without batting an eyelid?

“Then, after going in, just what magical beast hindered the path?” Beichen Ying somewhat curiously asked.

His luck was really surprisingly different.

At that time when he entered, there was a sabertooth tiger guarding the door. The deeper he went, the more sabertooth tigers there were. If it weren't for his martial arts being tolerable enough that he could get by, very likely today, he would be finished in there. In addition, the even more miserable thing was, not to speak of treasures, he didn't even get a hair.

Lan Xuan standing on the side fiercely nodded his head, and with a pitiful appearance: “The magical beast guarding the Amethyst Crystal Fish ought to be very terrible right?”

The stone room he entered was a little better than the one Little Shadow entered. At least, there was some broken copper and scrap iron. However, the magical beasts could be counted in piles. Killing them took him more than ten trips of going back and forth before he was able to clean up all the monsters. Thus, he was able to protect his life to come out.

Su Luo's expression was somewhat innocent: “Magical beasts? What magical beasts? We simply did not see even a hair of a magical beast. Nangong, what do you say?”

Finished, Su Luo very kind-heartedly sought confirmation from Nangong Liuyun.

Nangong Liuyun raised an eyebrow and smiled: “Silly girl, before they were running that fast, it was because they wanted to find a few magical beasts to temper their skills.”

So it turned out to be like that.

Su Luo very obediently nodded her head and said to Beichen Ying. “Following along this walk with us, it is unlikely to come across any magical beasts. However, if you still want to temper your skills, then change to another road, okay?”

Beichen Ying wanted to cry but had no tears.

Why would he want to temper his skills? Those magical beasts were all very awe-inspiring, okay?

Beichen Ying pulled at Su Luo's sleeves: "Sister-in-law, don't abandon me..."

Nangong Liuyun picked him up, throwing him aside just like tossing a cleaning rag: "Move a little further away."

"Why!" Being cast aside, Beichen Ying expressed was very unconvinced.

"The air you spit out is too smelly, it will fumigate my family's little Luo Luo too much." Nangong Liuyun randomly found a reason to fob him off.

Beichen Ying pointed at Nangong Liuyun, practically glaring at him somewhat speechlessly!

Shameless!

A man caught in the snare of love was simply too shameless! With the opposite sex, he didn't even have any humanity left!

Nangong Liuyun didn't even pay any goddamn attention to him, he only enquired after little Luo Luo's well-being and a bunch of other nonsense. This kind of disparity in treatment, seeing it simply made Beichen Ying jealous to death.

Su Luo rolled her eyes at Nangong: "We have arrived at the place, prepare to fight."

# Chapter 405 – Secret collection room (1)

---

In the wake of Su Luo's order, everybody made preparations to fight.

Up ahead in this corridor, a tiny light started to appear.

Everybody closely followed Su Luo's footsteps, cautiously and solemnly walking quietly on tiptoes. They held their breath, wary and alert as they walked forward.

While Nangong Liuyun merely pulled Su Luo to behind him, and walked to the very front of this procession.

This subtle action, maybe it was a subconscious movement on his part, but exactly because of this, Su Luo now felt especially warm inside.

She lifted her eyes to glance once at Nangong Liuyun, now, his whole attention was concentrated up ahead, the side view of his face was as perfect as the ancient Greek gods. He had a conscientious and cautious expression, compared to his normal image of despising worldly conventions, it was completely different.

Su Luo forgot who was it that said this, 'a serious man was the most fascinating'.

Now, she felt this sentence was quite right.

She had seen too much of his cruel, untamed appearance that despised worldly conventions, this was the first time she saw his serious side. Unexpectedly, she felt he was especially fascinating, making it nearly impossible for her to shift her gaze away.

Just at this moment, the muffled sound of a magical beast's howl came from up ahead.

Nangong Liuyun's expression changed slightly and he stopped his footsteps.

“What is it?”

Beichen Ying lowered his voice to ask in a whisper.

Nangong Liuyun didn't look at him, but stressing each syllable seriously and with a heavy atmosphere, said four words: “Eighth rank magical beast.”

“Hiss—” Beichen Ying and them, the three inhaled a breath of cold air.

Along this path, it had been very safe, not even the fur of a magical beast could be seen. Didn't expect that almost at the end, unexpectedly, an eighth rank magical beast would appear.

Eighth rank magical beast, that was what kind of concept?

The three of them were all sixth rank, Nangong Liuyun was a little better, yet only seventh rank, Su Luo...cough, cough, that little strength could be ignored and disregarded, okay.

Three sixth rank, one seventh rank, if it was an expert from the human race, then they could fight it, but the opponent was a magical beast. When a magical beast was at the same rank as a human, their strength would be greater by a lot.

Beichen Ying suddenly felt an extremely bad headache, and asked with some annoyance: “Isn't this supposed to be the safe passageway? All along the way, it would be unimpeded and unhindered? To actually have an eighth rank magical beast to appear?”

In a split second, everyone's gaze concentrated on Su Luo's body.

The Amethyst Crystal Fish was hers, it was also her and it that communicated, the responsibility naturally was placed on her.

Su Luo gave a very innocent expression: “This Amethyst Crystal Fish of mine is absolutely the real one.” Saying this, she sought confirmation from Nangong Liuyun.

Nangong Liuyun nodded slightly, showing he could confirm it was true.

Su Luo speechlessly grabbed her hair: “Obviously, this little thing told me to take the fifth path. Didn't you say to walk according to the Amethyst Crystal Fish's instructions and it would be fine?”

The three of them including Biechen Ying, with faces full of doubt, looked at Su Luo: “You are certain it is the fifth passageway?”

“That is what the little purple fish said.” Su Luo said with much certainty. She once again took out the Amethyst Crystal Fish and wanted to ask for clarifications.

However, what made her entire face become full of back lines was that when she glanced over at this little guy in her head, she saw it was actually breathing deeply, sound asleep. It was sleeping like the dead, no matter how she called out, it still wouldn't respond at all.

Su Luo could only helplessly spread out her hands toward those three people, and told the truth: “It fell asleep.”

The corner of Beichen Ying's mouth pursed, he was itching to grab this little guy by the tail and spank its bottom.

“Then what's to be done?” Beichen Ying finally still handed over the deciding authority to Nangong Liuyun.

Nangong Liuyun had a complex expression as he looked at Su Luo, thought about it and then said: “Luo Luo will remain here, the four of us going over will be enough.”

“Wait!” Su Luo took out an exquisite, little red sandalwood case, very carefully, she handed it over to Nangong Liuyun: “You take this, maybe it will be useful.”

## Chapter 406 – Secret collection room (2)

---

Nangong Liuyun's mood was clearly very good, his smiling expression seemed a little foolish.

He hugged Su Luo tightly, before releasing after quite a while, and then returned that red sandalwood case once again to Su Luo's hand. He hooked her nose with his finger, beaming with joy and said: "That I could get you to be concerned and care about me, how could this little danger count as anything?"

Saying this, he released Su Luo, turned around and left.

"Nangong——" Su Luo called out to stop him, and Nangong Liuyun halted his footsteps. Su Luo yelled seriously to his back: "You must be careful! You are not allowed to return injured!"

"Okay." Nangong Liuyun's back was to her, the corner of his mouth was plastered in an extremely joyful, pampering and light smile. His eyes were demonically charming and alluring, to the point of enticing all living things.

He finished speaking, and leading the three of them including Beichen Ying, left with quick strides.

Very shortly, the furious roars of a magical beast and fighting sounds could be heard coming from up ahead.

Su Luo thought about it and then followed after them.

How could Su Luo really stay here and wait to be saved?

If she really didn't have the strength to defend herself, going there would cause trouble for them. Then, she naturally would listen obediently and wait here for the results, so as not to create difficulties for her own team.

However now, she had a spirit pinball in her hand, a spirit pinball condensed by a peak seventh rank expert before death with astonishingly formidable power.

Very likely, its strength was even greater than Nangong Liuyun's.

If it was like this, how could she obediently and foolishly stay in the original place while letting her companions go risk life and limb on her behalf?

Su Luo used her hand to tightly grip onto that spirit pinball. Exhibiting her spirit dance steps, she quietly swept towards the place up front.

Since obtaining the Liu family's spirit dance steps, nobody in Liu family could cultivate it, on the contrary, Su Luo conveniently got it cheaply. If Liu family's Elder Ancestor found out, maybe he would be infuriated to the point of vomiting out blood again.

Not very long later, Su Luo arrived at the place where both parties were fighting.

This was not like the narrow passageway from before, rather, it was nearly a hundred square meters of open space. The lighting all around was very bright.

Fighting against Nangong Liuyun's group was a fierce, black-colored tiger.

The fierce black tiger looked exceptionally ferocious. Its hair was suffused with a faint luster with a malevolent appearance, its front fangs were sharp, and that robust, powerful body, at one glance, you could tell it was full of attack power.

Nangong Liuyun and them stood separately in each of the four directions, forming a square shape. They simply besieged it while it was standing in the middle.

Nangong Liuyun was the main fighter with the most laborious task of attracting all of the black fierce tiger's hatred, which was part of an obvious plan. He received all of its attacks.

Matching up to an eighth rank magical beast, the him at seventh rank actually wasn't even a bit frantic. The techniques he used were steady and firm, he continued throwing moves at it non-stop.

The three of them including Beichen Ying, constantly mounted sneak attacks on the black fierce tiger. They were using assassination technique, attempting to cause it a fatal injury stealthily.

Both sides fought very fiercely and bitterly, as if depending on a lottery ticket,

all except for Nangong Liuyun that is.

Beichen Ying was even more miserable, it seemed as if the fierce black tiger had fixed its attention on him. Even though he ran away very quickly, the clothing on his body was nearly torn to shreds by the fierce tiger's sharp claws. Only a few strands of tattered clothing hung on his body, making him look more bedraggled than a beggar.

His flawless cheeks also had a few lines of blood from being torn by those sharp claws. It looked terribly sinister.

The fierce black tiger was not a fool, very quickly, it was able to see through Nangong Liuyun's strategy. It took the risk of being stabbed and kicked its leg to the left, towards Lan Xuan, kicking him ruthlessly into the wall. Then, it stuck close to the wall and jumped to the floor.

Lan Xuan covered his chest and repeatedly coughed. He couldn't suppress it and spit out a few mouthfuls of blood, only then did his vigor slowly return.

After the fierce black tiger kick Lan Xuan away, again it slapped its paw towards Beichen Ying on its right.

With regards to these few little fleas that constantly jumped up and down, the fierce black tiger felt it was pestered beyond endurance. First, it should get rid of these creatures, then concentrate its mind on the opponent that was most difficult to deal with.

That huge claw gave off formidable power, carrying with it an inexhaustible strength.

## Chapter 407 – Secret collection room (3)

---

It slapped towards Beichen Ying's head with a thunderous roar, with the strength of five thousand kilograms—

“Careful!” Nangong Liuyun's expression changed slightly!

However, no sooner said than done, who Nangong Liuyun stood too far away, wanted to rush forth to save him, but it was already too late.

If Beichen Ying was slapped by that huge claw, his whole head would become paste!

Seeing that his life was in imminent peril!

Just at this critical moment.

Su Luo appeared.

Nobody would have anticipated, even Su Luo herself hadn't expected that her appearance would completely change this fight, with their side that was thoroughly at a disadvantage.

Su Luo's hand held that spirit pinball, just when she was about to toss it at the fierce black tiger, but all of a sudden, her expression changed.

Just when she was about to toss it, the spirit pinball had already been replaced with the Amethyst Crystal Fish!

This was not because Su Luo was reluctant to use the spirit pinball, rather, it was the result of the Amethyst Crystal Fish screeching in her head.

Su Luo's control of her strength was very good, and she directly sent the Amethyst Crystal Fish smashing towards that fierce black tiger's claw that was full of formidable power.

Originally, that claw was merely ten centimeters away from Beichen Ying's

head. However, due to an extra Amethyst Crystal Fish appearing above Beichen Ying's head, that fierce black tiger abruptly restrained its claw. It directly grabbed towards that Amethyst Crystal Fish and immediately uncaringly abandoned Beichen Ying.

The fierce black tiger, with both hands, cupped that Amethyst Crystal Fish. It had a somewhat incredulous and also extremely excited expression....

The originally intense battle, because of the fierce black tiger having stopped fighting, quieted down.

Nangong Liuyun walked quickly to Su Luo's side, with a dark face, he coldly chided her: "Didn't I tell you to be obedient and stay behind? How could you be this disobedient!"

Su Luo somewhat embarrassingly stuck out her tongue, but wouldn't say anything.

"Didn't I tell you that this was an eighth rank magical beast! What is a minor, insignificant, little third rank doing over here? Do you dislike not dying quickly enough, am I right?" Nangong Liuyun's expression was coldly solemn, overbearingly interrogating her, a trace of lingering fear and concern flashing through his eyes.

He was really fierce...Su Luo stuck her tongue out.

"Isn't it because I was worried about you." Su Luo said in a very low voice with her head hanging down.

"What did you say?" Nangong Liuyun's originally furious expression stiffened in a split second, afterwards, he asked somewhat unnaturally.

"If you didn't hear it then forget it! Humph. If it was not for me coming, you guys won't be able to beat it!" Su Luo, not without some smugness, raised an eyebrow: "I just saved Beichen Ying's life, hey, Beichen Ying, do you admit to this grace of saving your life?"

"Acknowledged, acknowledged, I certainly will admit to it. I must admit it." Beichen Ying shook his head and with great difficulty, became clear-headed. Now, he was still patting his chest from the lingering fear: "Just a moment ago I really did take a trip to the gates of hell. Even now, my heart is still jumping with

'ba-thump, ba-thump' sounds."

Su Luo smugly raised an eyebrow towards Nangong Liuyun: "Did you not see, he was saved by me."

Nangong Liuyun didn't know whether to laugh or cry, finally, he could only let out a deep sigh and in a spoiling manner, rubbed her head: "This time, it is because your luck was good. Next time, you need to be obedient, have you memorized it?"

"Which time has my luck been bad?" Su Luo, who was somewhat unconvinced, said: "Luck is also a part of strength, this you must acknowledge as the truth."

While they were speaking, Lan Xuan, who had been sent flying into the wall by one kick from the fierce black tiger, covered his chest that was hurting and walked over with lurching steps. He was very perplexed as he interrupted: "What's going on? Is there an armistice?"

Beichen Ying disgruntledly kicked him in the butt. Pointing at the fierce black tiger that was still super excited, he peevishly rolled his eyes. "Haven't you grown some eyes? Still can't see clearly? This matter was obviously something that could be avoided...we, however...alas...our battle could be considered to have been fought in vain. This injury was also suffered in vain."

## Chapter 408 – Secret collection room (4)

---

Lan Xuan now finally came to a realization, with both eyes opened wide like huge copper bells. He stammered his sentences because of feeling that it was too incredulous: “Too obscure!!! As it turns out, the so-called obtaining the Amethyst Crystal Fish enables a person to smoothly pass through the routes is real! It was actually in this manner! We are truly foolish through and through, to still go as far as to come to blows with this huge foolish tiger!”

Obviously, as long as they had shown the Amethyst Crystal Fish, then it would have been fine. However, they actually chose the most idiotic, most primitive and most barbaric way.

Lan Xuan touched the wound on his chest, a moment ago, it still didn't hurt, now, after knowing the truth, he felt it was extremely painful. It hurt so much that he almost passed out.

Momentarily, the surrounding mood was somewhat complicated. Everyone was all speechlessly glaring at that fierce black tiger who was holding the Amethyst Crystal Fish. Each and every one of them was fuming with rage between gritted teeth, but had no way to vent their anger.

Su Luo coughed clearly twice to break this awkward atmosphere: “Okay, okay, isn't this because of inexperience? Fall into the moat and you'll be wiser next time. Next time, we'll know it.”

Lan Xuan silently cast her a glance...he touched his wounded chest again, as a person who hadn't been kicked into the wall, how could she understand his complicated state of mind right now?

Su Luo very kindly patted his shoulder: “You should think of the good side, if it was not for the Amethyst Crystal Fish appearing just in time, this chest of yours also would not be kicked only once.”

Lan Xuan: “....”

Su Luo’s attention returned to the body of the fierce black tiger. She very cautiously walked up to the front of it a step.

Even though the fighting had already subsided, the Amethyst Crystal Fish was still in the fierce black tiger’s hand. How could she get it back without sending in an army and not being met with bloodshed? It was very obvious that this slow-witted tiger had some kind of a peculiar, complicated feeling towards the Amethyst Crystal Fish.

Su Luo was only able to take one step forward before Nangong Liuyun, with one tug, pulled her behind him. He still didn’t forget to send her a quick glare: “Want to court death?”

Su Luo’s mouth deflated a little, slyly, she secretly thought: this stingy male, perhaps his temper still hadn’t cooled yet, right?

Su Luo squeezed out a smiling expression that carried a touch of cajoling: “Don’t be so nervous, the Amethyst Crystal Fish has already acknowledged me as its master. How could that foolish tiger attack me? You should feel at ease.”

Saying this, Su Luo pushed Nangong Liuyun away and took a step forward again.

Just at this time, this unstable situation suddenly changed!

One could only see that huge foolish tiger return to his senses from his state of excitement. That pair of naturally cold eyes imposingly shot towards Su Luo’s location.

Afterwards, its huge body sprung towards Su Luo, pouncing over to her!

“Careful!” Nangong Liuyun’s complexion changed slightly.

“Sister-in-law, be careful!” Beichen Ying and them rapidly gathered together to form a wall in front of Su Luo. They steadily protected Su Luo who was now behind them.

However, that huge foolish tiger’s speed did not decrease, and still as before, pounced ferociously towards Su Luo. Its two front claws were sharp as a dagger that glittered like frost and snow, with a threatening murderous aura.

The pair of claws danced in the wind, 'swish, swish, swish', the three sounds resounded in succession.

Beichen Ying, Lan Xuan, Anye Ming, the three of them were separately flipped flying by this huge foolish tiger. Afterwards, each and every one of them smashed into the wall, grimacing from the pain.

Nangong Liuyun's expression condensed into frost, he concentrated all the spirit force from his body and struck at the huge foolish tiger with all his strength.

Yet, the huge foolish tiger only opened its mouth like a bloody, sacrificial bowl towards Nangong Liuyun's hand——

Just at this critical moment, Su Luo, in one move, pushed Nangong Liuyun away!

If not, Nangong Liuyun's right arm would have simply been swallowed by the huge foolish tiger.

One could only see a flash of white light, and Su Luo's palm was already gripping that spirit pinball. Just when she was, with no holds barred, prepared to use that spirit pinball on the huge foolish tiger's body, when who would have thought——

The huge foolish tiger, with one move, had stopped Su Luo with a bear hug!

Its huge head rubbed back and forth against her shoulder and its huge moist tongue licked her face and pasted her face with saliva. In the end it left behind an area full of sticky saliva——

## Chapter 409 – Secret collection room (5)

---

Su Luo was dumbfounded.

Nangong Liuyun stared blankly.

Beichen Ying, Lan Xuan and Anye Ming, who were rushing over wanting to save her, were also stupefied to a stop.

That huge foolish tiger saw that Su Luo didn't respond to it and seemed to be a little unhappy. With a low voice, it snarled at Su Luo. It roared and howled, shouting randomly, as if trying to attract her attention.

Su Luo, while wiping off the sticky saliva on her face, suddenly had an urge to look up at the sky and start cursing...who had she incur the wrath of or provoked!

The huge foolish tiger thought that Su Luo really liked its affectionate gesture. With a joyous sound, it once again rushed up to Su Luo and started to lick her face with its huge tongue.

The huge foolish tiger's figure was very big and strong, that tongue was bigger than an iron fan. A licking tongue rolled past, making Su Luo feel as if a burst of gale had blown past, and her body swayed back and forth. That fishy stench smelled so bad that she almost cried....

In the beginning, Beichen Ying was still very envious. Being able to be liked by this huge foolish tiger, wouldn't it be such a great achievement?

After seeing Su Luo's forced and suffering appearance, immediately, he had an expression full of extreme sympathy.

Beichen Ying movingly and tragically looked at Su Luo, as if secretly saying: in order to maintain a short period of peace, sister-in-law's life is honestly not very easy.

Nangong Liuyun saw Su Luo with her eyes tightly closed, frowning and standing there distractedly, suddenly, he didn't know whether to laugh or cry. With one hand, he pulled Su Luo to him, and using the sleeves of his other hand to wipe her face, he was smiling while wiping away: "How about it? Still okay?"

After wiping her dry with great difficulty, Su Luo finally sucked in a deep breath of air, and after a while, she finally said: "At last, I can breathe! Way too trying!"

Just a moment ago, that sticky liquid was pasted all over her face, giving her a feeling of being covered in a face mask.

The huge foolish tiger's enormous body sat in front of Su Luo, its large eyes silently and with an aggrieved expression looked at her. Its eyes also had a mistreated expression from being ignored.

Su Luo was immediately speechless.

This was the formidable, awe-inspiring, great, fierce tiger, that would utterly defeat Nangong Liuyun, the four of them's joined attacks, the eighth rank magical beast, okay?

Shouldn't it be the kind that was extremely arrogant, a living mystical existence, proud and pampered? Why on earth would it show this kind of seeking to be petted and comforted appearance, as if acting cute? She was the one that was the most wronged, okay?

The huge foolish tiger called out a few times towards Su Luo with a lowered voice, and once again pitifully lowered its eyes. It looked simply heartbroken with a very downcast mood.

Su Luo perplexedly scratched her hair, in the end, what's going on?

Nangong Liuyun observed even the smallest details, and was the first to see through everything. One could only see him frown slightly: "It seemed to be drooling over some kind of treasure on your body."

Some kind of treasure on her body? Su Luo sank into deep doubt.

To say there were many treasures on her body, then there weren't many; to say there were only a few, then that was also untrue. Don't tell her that she needed to take them out one by one for it to choose? Alas, if only the little divine

dragon was here, then everything would be fine, he should be able to communicate with the huge foolish tiger.

Unfortunately, that gluttonous little guy now was sprawled on his back, lying within her space and snoring away, sound asleep. His plump little belly, in the wake of his breathing, bulged out again and again, looking extremely adorable.

Su Luo's gaze swept through her space, suddenly, she stopped at a certain place.

That's right!

How could she have forgotten about this treasure?

At that time, the little divine dragon was seduced to her side because of this spirit spring. Afterwards, she experimented it on the Dragon Scaled Horse, and it was quite evident that the Dragon Scaled Horse was also very fond of the Celestial Spirit Water. Once again, even later, she relied on adding Celestial Spirit Water into the fish food, opening a killing road in all directions and hooking a full one thousand five hundred Amethyst Thorned fishes.

The above-mentioned events were all signs which clearly indicated that magical beasts were extremely fond of Celestial Spirit Water.

Could it be that this huge foolish tiger was looking for Celestial Spirit Water?

But, how did the huge foolish tiger know that her space had Celestial Spirit Water...Su Luo's gaze floated towards the Amethyst Crystal Fish being held tightly in the palm of the huge foolish tiger...

## Chapter 410-Secret collection room (6)

---

Okay, this was absolutely a little traitor.

Su Luo, half-believing and half-doubting, took out a cup of Celestial Spirit Water from her own space.

Without waiting for her to hold it steadily, the huge foolish tiger, in an instant, rushed towards her. Its huge body directly threw itself at her, Su Luo stumbled back a step, and Nangong Liuyun easily grabbed hold of her hand, stabilizing her.

The cup in her hand swayed back and forth. Without waiting for the Celestial Spirit Water to be poured out, the huge foolish tiger had already swallowed whole the water along with the cup!

It didn't even bother to chew, with one mouthful, it swallowed everything cleanly and neatly.

Without waiting for Su Luo to return to her senses, the huge foolish tiger once again enthusiastically threw itself at Su Luo. It extended its long and thick tongue to lick towards Su Luo's face.

Without any doubt, this was absolutely the huge foolish tiger's way of showing its enthusiasm towards humans.

However, Su Luo was really unable to bear this kind of enthusiastic manner. She raised her hands in surrender and took out another cup of water to pour into its wide open mouth, to block its affectionate manner towards her.

It was not because Su Luo was unwilling to part with some Celestial Spirit Water, it was really because this huge foolish tiger was not easy to wait upon.

If she directly gave it a wooden bucket of Celestial Spirit Water, then it absolutely would still be unsatisfied. When the time came, she still wouldn't be able to leave.

Therefore, from the beginning, the basic amount must be small, this way, it would not be difficult for her to increase it.

Sure enough, the huge foolish tiger once again drank the cup of Celestial Spirit Water very blissfully. Then, it once again pretended to be pitiful as it looked at Su Luo.

Su Luo spread out both hands: “Don’t have anymore!”

“Awoo——” The huge foolish tiger was unreconciled and once again rushed over to show Su Luo various kinds of enthusiasm. Su Luo helplessly closed her eyes and held her breath, suffering various kinds of ravages from it.

If it demanded the water, and she give it, this certainly meant that she had a lot of Celestial Spirit Water, then today, she absolutely wouldn’t be able to leave. Therefore, Su Luo decided not to indulge its little temper.

As expected, no matter how enthusiastic it was, Su Luo merely frowned with her eyes closed and did not respond. After quite a while, the huge foolish tiger finally released Su Luo. It walked to the side with a pitiful expression, squatted down in the corner, and occasionally would cast Su Luo a glance of feeling wronged.

Nangong Liuyun once again started on the job of washing her clean. He tidied up Su Luo until she was completely clean and neat, then he finally sighed, saying: “Such a strong taste.”

Su Luo snorted twice: “Otherwise, how about switching to you instead?”

Su Luo’s brain conjured the image of Nangong Liuyun being affectionately kissed by the huge foolish tiger, and suddenly, she uttered a ‘pfft’ laughing sound.

Seeing that Amethyst Crystal Fish still being held in the huge foolish tiger’s paw, Su Luo thought about it, then she took out a very small wooden bucket. She carried the wooden bucket to arrive in front of the huge foolish tiger, indicating to exchange this bucket full of Celestial Spirit Water for the Amethyst Crystal Fish.

The huge foolish tiger looked at the Amethyst Crystal Fish, and then looked again at the wooden bucket. It somewhat stupidly scratched its head, having a

really hard time choosing.

The two-faced, deceitful Su Luo was well-versed in the ways of haggling over price. She pulled at Nangong Liuyun, pretending to walk away, and the huge foolish tiger that had merely grown a large head, was suddenly taken in by this deceit. It dashed towards her while roaring 'awoo, awoo'. It handed over the Amethyst Crystal Fish to Su Luo, and with a huge claw, clasped the little wooden bucket to place it in front of Su Luo.

A smiling expression of having prevailed flashed through Su Luo's eyes. With the raise of a hand, a stream of water shot out like an arrow. In a short time, it filled the little wooden bucket completely.

Seeing the leaving backs of Su Luo and her people, the huge foolish tiger somewhat stupidly scratched its head.

Only after they left that section did Beichen Ying finally slowly exhale a breath of heavy air. He simply worshipped Su Luo to death, and with a pair of beautiful eyes that was as bright as the full moon, he looked at her: "Sister-in-law! This team is really no good without you! From now on, you should be our little number five!"

Lan Xuan immediately followed after with a more rowdy agreement: "That's right, that's right, if it weren't for sister-in-law taking action today, we absolutely wouldn't be able to escape from within the palms of that huge foolish tiger. Certainly, this is not the most important point. The key is that sister-in-law didn't even need to fight to cause the surrender of the opponent (1), with the military force not even seeing blood. Not a single soldier was wasted in this final move, this was truly the greatest action in existence!"

Anye Ming enigmatically nodded his head: "I second that notion."

*1) Didn't even need to fight to cause the surrender of the opponent: Is a strategy from the ancient Chinese text called the Art of War by Sun Wu, an ancient Chinese military strategist. If there is a better English translation for this strategy please let me know...I loosely translated it almost word by word.*

## Chapter 411 – Secret collection room (7)

---

Nangong Liuyun had one hand on Su Luo's shoulder, with an ingratiating smile that was devilishly charming, he raised an eyebrow: "No need to be that troublesome, Luo girl is already this king's people."

Beichen Ying and them all curled their lips in disdain and turned their faces away. This guy was really shameless, obviously he hadn't achieved it, yet he still said it.

Sure enough, Su Luo crossly glared at him: "You can eat indiscriminately but you shouldn't make irresponsible remarks."

Nangong Liuyun accused with a hidden bitterness: "You won't take responsibility!"

Su Luo held her hand to her forehead, did this guy's head get screwed up again?

Su Luo pushed him away: "Also, not looking at where we are at now. Always behaving in this indecent manner. After another few hours, the Amethyst Fish Palace will disappear, we had better increase our speed."

If Su Luo hadn't mentioned it, then all's good, once she mentioned it, everyone remembered the current situation.

They still hadn't found the secret collection room!

As a result, everyone increased their speed and walked onwards. Nangong Liuyun, with a faintly complaining expression, tugged at the hem of Su Luo's clothing, like a young wife having been subjected to some grievance. He used that pair of accusing eyes to continuously stare at her.

Su Luo walked in front and Nangong Liuyun merely pitifully tugged at her clothing.

Now, the two of them seemed like Su Luo was the experienced cow walking ahead, while Nangong Liuyun was the plow following behind the experienced cow.

Su Luo walked, Nangong Liuyun walked.

Su Luo stopped, Nangong Liuyun stopped.

The corner of Su Luo's mouth pursed, speechlessly looking to the sky, she paused her footsteps to glare back at him.

When Su Luo glared at him, his mood was still very good and his mouth split open into a smile towards her. That smile exposed his snow-white teeth and looked somewhat foolish.

Su Luo did not feel like paying him any attention and turned around to walk off on her own. Once again, he reverted to his old ways, starting to accuse her with secret grudges and of having mistreated him as he glared at her. He held on to her clothing and followed behind, blindly and slavishly.

Su Luo, with regards towards him, was simply speechless to the extreme.

Could this man be any more childish! Even a five-year-old child was more sensible than him, okay? He was insisting on having all of her attention on him before he was good, alright?

Su Luo was completely defeated by him.

It was useless to employ the hard stuff on him. It was simply like punching into cotton, he absolutely would pretend to be feeble for her to see.

Therefore, Su Luo could only choose to use the soft method to deal with him.

With no other way, Su Luo tore away from him who was holding on to her clothing. Her fine, pale, delicate hand then grabbed hold of his hand, and with large strides, walked forward.

Nangong Liuyun, this childish kid, was extremely happy. The corner of his mouth pointed up into an arc and he was smiling from the corner of his eyes to the tip of his brow. He smiled until he appeared dim-witted.

“What are you smiling about? Smile once more and I'll cut off your mouth!” Su Luo harshly roared at him.

This guy was used to getting a mile when he was given an inch. Give him sunlight and he would glitter brilliantly. Give him a little color and he would dare to open a dye workshop. Therefore, Su Luo definitely could not let him be so smug.

Nangong Liuyun's mood was extremely good, with an air of complacency, he said: "It was you who took the initiative to hold this king's hand."

"Then, again, so what?" Su Luo peevishly responded.

"Since you already grabbed hold, then don't even think about letting go again. You must take responsibility till the end." Nangong Liuyun arrogantly and in a spoiled manner, lifted his chin, with a smug manner of having gotten away with a crafty scheme.

"Take responsibly for what? Take responsibility of you eating and pooping for a lifetime?" Su Luo snorted twice.

"A lifetime? Good, then it's agreed upon like this." Nangong Liuyun embraced Su Luo and left an imprint on her lips. Just like this, he passed judgement on her life and put the lid on the coffin.

Nangong Liuyun's speed was as fast as lightning, after he affixed the seal on her lips, Su Luo finally managed to react.

Su Luo immediately became dumbfounded, she foolishly looked at Nangong Liuyun.

What did she say just now? Why was it that all of a sudden that was stamped and sealed?

A little self-satisfaction flashed through the corner of Nangong Liuyun's eyes, his gaze wandered without pause, looking around in all directions, only, he wouldn't look at Su Luo. But he merely mouthed: "Words that have been spoken and sealed with a mark on the lips, is something you can not renege on."

## Chapter 412 – Secret collection room (8)

---

Su Luo immediately became depressed: “You cheated!”

Nangong Liuyun declined to comment and then said while not allowing other opinions: “In any case, you cannot go back on your promise. Whoever backs out is a puppy.”

There really was this kind of tradition among the citizens of Eastern Ling Empire, by means of lips touching lips to seal the deal, the words spoken after would then take effect. Nangong Liuyun bullied Su Luo just because her speed was not as fast as his.

“I don’t want to talk to you!” Su Luo turned her face away while panting with rage.

After turning her face away, she realized that her face was somewhat burning hot. Her heart jumped around like a little deer with ‘ba-thump, ba-thump’ sounds, the circulation through her heart pulsing rapidly.

Her body’s instinctive reactions could very clearly explain a few questions, however, it was all deliberately overlooked by Su Luo.

Behind them, Beichen Ying, Lan Xuan and Anye Ming, the three of them, exchanged meaningful glances.

Nangong Liuyun’s, this guy’s, conduct once again rewrote a new page in their knowledge of him for so many years!

Didn’t expect it, really would never have imagined it.

Normally, this guy had an appearance that was dignified, noble, aloof and icily arrogant. They didn’t expect that when he was wooing a Miss he admired, he would actually be this kind of rogue.

To cheat, fool, abduct, and swindle, these four methods, had he made

preparations to use every one of the tricks?

If other young ladies were aware that the male god in their hearts, with the kind of arrogance that came from being up high, His Highness Prince Jin, would have this kind of extremely childish appearance, perhaps the lightly-affected young ladies would vomit blood, while the severe ones would faint.

Even them who were his childhood friends would shudder three times upon seeing him like this.

The three of them were in the midst of using their eyes to communicate and discuss this, when all of a sudden, they felt a burst of chilly wind blow towards them. Immediately, a kind of chill slowly rose up from the soles of their feet, following along the back, then scattering in all directions into the hundreds of bones in their four limbs....

The three of them, with excellent non-verbal coordination, simultaneously turned their heads, just in time to meet Nangong Liuyun's pair of abstruse eyes that was giving off an eerily icy light.

"Cough, cough, cough——" Beichen Ying was the one who couldn't hold it in the most, with just one look from Nangong Liuyun, immediately he started to cough.

"What are you guys doing?" Nangong Liuyun's voice was soft as clouds and gentle as the wind, but when the three of them heard it, was like the whistling frosty wind in a cold winter.

"No, nothing. We are very busy, very busy, extremely busy." Lan Xuan feigned an appearance full of innocence and continued to say very normally.

"Looks like after we go back, I need to find a few magical beasts for you guys to play with so as to avoid you guys becoming as idle as old gossiping women." Nangong Liuyun faintly smiled as he looked at them.

"Ah——Don't do it!" Beichen Ying was the first to return to his senses, and gave a loud shout: "Second older brother is the most handsome, confident and at ease, incomparable under the heavens, most distinguished, accomplished, so elegant that any flower would bloom when they see, that second older brother ah. Beg you to let this go, please don't get angry. I beseech you to pretend we

don't exist....”

Boo hoo, boo hoo, only a ghost would want to fight with a magical beast.

Nangong Liuyun was born with an abnormal disposition. With Beichen Ying's own sixth rank strength, Nangong Liuyun definitely would find two sixth rank magical beasts to bring back. Afterwards, he would lock the three of them together... boo hoo, so dreadfully frightening.

Su Luo, who was walking up ahead, heard sounds of activity and couldn't help but to turn her head around to ask in a mild tone: “What's going on?”

Before Beichen Ying could even ask for help, he was stared to a stop by Nangong Liuyun's seemingly mild gaze. He became directly unable to move.

Nangong Liuyun hugged Su Luo's shoulders, his smile was eagerly attentive with a face and appearance full of fawning to curry favor from her: “Beichen Ying felt his strength was too lacking and decided to cultivate more properly, so as to avoid dragging you in next time. The matter before, he felt very ashamed.”

Su Luo nodded her head and tossed a smile towards Beichen Ying: “This way is also good, depending on a mountain, it could collapse, leaning on a person, that person could run away. A person having their own strength is the most reliable.”

Beichen Ying's face had a bitter, long suffering expression and wanted to complain, but Su Luo was already pulled away earlier by Nangong Liuyun, this bastard.

Having a love in the opposite sex, they lose all humanity! He strongly wanted to demand equal treatment! Beichen Ying wanted to shout, but didn't dare to.

## Chapter 413 – Secret collection room (9)

---

As a result, the group of three with a bitter fate looked at each other in dismay. Each and every one of them had a forced expression full of suffering as they shuffled forward step by step.

Beichen Ying furthermore had a hidden grudge in his heart and could only sigh: Why didn't his mom give birth to him as a woman? The disparity in treatment was too severe....

Along the way, they talked and smiled. It wasn't known how long they walked before the party of five finally arrived at the end of the road.

Along this path, they really hadn't encountered another magical beast, not even a first ranked one. It had been so safe they were close to being bored.

A stone door was at the end of the road.

Three strikingly huge words were engraved on the stone door: Secret Collection Room.

Finally, they had found the place. Everyone had a feeling that a weight had been lifted from their shoulders.

However, they didn't know until later that this was merely the beginning.

Having approached the stone door, Su Luo was astonished to discover that this really wasn't an ordinary stone door. Rather, it was made from a special material.

It was white as suet white jade. The material was cold and stiff like frost. This door seemed to be emitting a faint cold air interwoven with some spirit force. If someone hit it with a fist, the force would be rebounded back by a transparent bright screen.

"There is a seal on the stone door, very unyielding." Nangong Liuyun examined

the door in about the time it would take a stick of incense to burn before arriving at a verdict.

“Then what should we do? Can it be undone?” Su Luo asked with some concern.

To make Nangong Liuyun say these two words “very unyielding” in assessment, it was clear that this seal was really hard to unravel.

Nangong Liuyun’s smiling and ingratiating face had already become serious and imposing. He muttered to himself for quite a while and gradually said: “Will try with all my effort.”

Su Luo, Beichen Ying, and others moved back a few steps, leaving Nangong Liuyun to stand alone in front of the stone door.

Nangong Liuyun’s expression was focused and cold. His pair of eyes moved like electricity, they carefully paused often to examine the inscription on the stone door from up to down and left to right. His mouth seemed to be muttering and calculating something.

The surroundings became very quiet.

Time gradually passed bit by bit...

It was even longer than the time it had taken to break the seal on the palace gate from before.

Su Luo, Beichen Ying and the rest were all somewhat anxious.

The Amethyst Fish Palace would not wait for anyone, after twenty-four hours it would automatically disappear from the ocean’s surface.

At that time, if you were to be trapped in the stone rooms and couldn’t get out, then don’t even think about leaving the Amethyst Fish Palace in this lifetime.

Su Luo did a quick calculation of the time. They already only had less than two hours remaining.

Nangong Liuyun stood there for a long time. Suddenly, an odd color flashed across his face. The plump lips on that perfect face pointed up slightly, as if his mood was pretty good.

One could only see both of his hands in front of his chest knotted into a seal, stream after stream of complicated imprints flew out from his hand and shot into the inscription on the stone door.

“Crackle sssss— —”

A subtle sound came from the door.

The imprints that Nangong Liuyun had made seemed to have an extremely strong corrosive effect. The places where he had sent the imprint, the transparent protective layer there would immediately be corroded away.

The imprint was like very small black tadpoles.

It wasn't just one or two but rather a countless number of little black dots.

Once it landed, the imprint would start to cover the surface spreading in all directions. Very quickly, black specks had crawled all over the top of the bright white protective screen.

The black specks spread continuously, it kept extending further until it had nearly climbed over the entire protective cover.

Finally, that protective cover that had been changed to completely black sent out a violent burst of trembling. The protective cover started to disintegrate. The cracks became bigger and bigger, until finally one could only hear a crashing noise. That originally indestructible protective cover eventually exploded into fragmented pieces. Ultimately, it vanished into thin air.

Su Luo finally let out the breath she was holding.

“Crash— —”

After a period of some noise, those tightly closed hinged door panels slowly opened with one going left and another going right.

Just at this moment, all of a sudden from outside came the sounds of rushing footsteps.

Su Luo turned her head back to look, her expression immediately became somewhat complicated.

## Chapter 414 – Secret collection room (10)

---

The people that came weren't strangers, they were the crown prince's group of people.

Originally, this group of people was grandiose with many people. However now, when Su Luo swept them a glance, she discovered there were only a few people left. The rest of the people seemed to all have disappeared.

Right now, the crown prince and his people were also extremely bedraggled.

The crown prince had been blown asunder once by the fake Amethyst Crystal Fish from before, so he was already very disheveled. But compared to the him right now, that before could only have been considered child's play.

The crown prince was covered in blood from head to toe with bloodstains everywhere. Except for his pair of eyes, it was nearly impossible for others to recognize his true features.

Li Aotian who followed closely behind wasn't any better off.

One could only see the blood coagulated on his hair. making it knot up. The flowing blood on his face was mixed with sweat, giving off a faint stinky smell. There were traces that his right hand had been wrapped up before, and there were more bloodstains on his clothes. He looked extremely unkempt and bedraggled.

The Jade Lake's Fairy was also no better off.

She was accustomed to wearing a white dress of silk from head to toe, like an exceedingly refined fairy that was above the common people. Normally, she was always spotless, but now, her white silk dress was dyed full of bloodstains. On her matchless beautiful and exquisite face, there were marks of having been scratched by magical beasts.

Su Luo was sizing them up and they were also sizing up Su Luo.

When compared to them, Beichen Ying, the three of them, were simply too clean and way too neat.

“You guys——” The crown prince stared with shock towards Beichen Ying, “How could you possibly arrive here alive?”

Beichen Ying deliberately tried to anger the crown prince. With an appearance of all smiles and full of smugness: “Oh, such a bedraggled crown prince, must have experienced a fierce battle, right? How was it? Were the magical beasts very ferocious?”

The crown prince glared at him furiously: “No better or worse.”

Beichen Ying unhappily snorted: “Who followed you to be no better or worse? We simply did not encounter even a little danger, whereas you guys, hehe, really cut a sorry figure.”

“Talk big without writing a draft!” The crown prince’s foot shifted a few steps toward the stone door, while coldly snorting.

Beichen Ying complacently raised an eyebrow: “Does it look like we had encountered any magical beasts? Also. why don’t you see who is in our team!”

With Su Luo present, naturally everything was fine. All the dangers would stop to move aside, as if there was some kind of halo over her head.

At the onset, the few of them also didn’t believe in her. However, the things that happened afterwards kept proving to them to trust Su Luo in order to live forever.

The Jade Lake’s Fairy interrupted in a cold voice: “With third senior brother present, you guys were naturally able to avert disaster. If third senior brother was in our team...”

Beichen Ying had a smile that was not quite a smile as he raised an eyebrow. He swept her a quick glance and lightly crooned: “Yaoyao younger sister, this time you certainly guessed wrongly.”

The Jade Lake’s Fairy sneeringly said: “How could I have guessed wrong? If it was not third senior brother, then could it really be the Miss Su you guys keep

saying? Stop telling jokes, it's not even a little bit funny.”

Beichen Ying secretly said in his heart: Yaoyao younger sister, this time you hit upon the truth.

However, Nangong Liuyun swept him a glance, then Beichen Ying wasn't prepared to tell her the truth. He and Lan Xuan then only laughed with 'hehehe' sounds. They laughed until other people were upset from the bottom of their hearts.

Just at this time, suddenly, a shadow rushed quickly towards the inside of the door— —

Immediately after was another shadow, then a third person's shadow.

“Damn sneaky! Nangong Liujue really knows how to pick up small advantages. Second older brother opened the sealed door with great difficulty but let them take advantage of it!” Lan Xuan was infuriated to the point of starting to yell out loud.

“Then why are we still waiting? We should also go in without delay!” Beichen Ying, without saying anything further, hurried his footsteps to rush inside.

After, Anye Ming also followed closely behind Beichen Ying and rushed in.

Only Su Luo and Nangong Liuyun didn't move.

Su Luo lifted her eyes to look over and clearly saw the corner of Nangong Liuyun's mouth hook into an enigmatic curve.

## Chapter 415 – Two-faced bamboo (1)

---

Su Luo curiously asked Nangong Liuyun: “Why didn’t you enter? Making the wedding clothing for other people is not something a person of your character would do.”

With her understanding of Nangong Liuyun, this guy was a master that would absolutely not let himself suffer the slightest loss.

On Nangong Liuyun’s matchless handsome face stretched a smile brimming with an extremely sinister aura: “Wait a moment more, then in a little while, I’ll take you to see a good play. I guarantee you will like it.”

Just a moment ago, when he was removing the seal, he sensed that something was amiss inside, so he was not in a hurry to enter.

“Oh? Don’t tell me that inside... Alas, you let them charge in to break through enemy lines, you are really too two-faced!” Su Luo accused him. Subsequently, she couldn’t help but to start laughing.

The pitiful crown prince, wherever you arrived at, you would always be falling for Nangong Liuyun’s schemes.

He thought he was benefiting at Nangong Liuyun’s expense when he rushed in, but whether this advantage was alright to occupy, only knowing himself would he realize it.

Having thought of things to this point, Su Luo couldn’t help sympathizing somewhat with this person who suffered defeat at every battle, but kept on fighting despite the setbacks. This crown prince was incomparably tenacious.

Like this for so many years, he struggled in the palm of Nangong Liuyun’s hand and still had a healthy mind and body to live up until now. It was simply not easy for him, just thinking about it, she pitied him. .

Nangong Liuyun flicked her bright and clean forehead once with a humorous appearance and in a good mood: “Little girl is again silently cursing this king?”

“How could that be.” Su Luo firmly denied, her entire face had a proper righteous expression, and she said deadly earnestly: “I was only praising you in my heart, how could you slander me like this?”

Nangong Liuyun gently stroked her black hair, with a cunning fox-like smile: “Praising this king should not be a humiliating thing, saying it out loud will be fine, there is no need to keep it in your heart right? Come, speak a few words for this king to listen to.”

Wherefore was Su Luo really praising him? If she were to say those unspoken criticisms of hers out loud, it would anger him until he walked away from the violent explosive fury.

Therefore, she simply smiled with a few ‘hehe’ ignoring his request, and furthermore, very cleverly changed the topic: “How long has it been already, why is it that there isn’t even a bit of the sound of activity inside? They could not truly have been completely wiped out right?”

Nangong Liuyun raised the corner of his eyebrow and smiled, his eyes had a concentrated pampering expression. He led Su Luo by the hands: “The time passed is more or less enough, let’s enter to watch the play.”

Su Luo followed Nangong Liuyun to enter the jade door. A stone room that was not small appeared in front of her, moreover, the surrounding space was extremely large. This place seemed like an independent palace, rows and rows of stone rooms were lined up within it.

At this moment, a small stone room appeared in front of them, with words “Secret Collection Room” written on it.

The door was lightly closed, just a push and it would open.

The inside of the stone room was filled with a faint fog. The degree of visibility was quite low, even if it was Su Luo, this kind of vision, when looking, she was only able to see the area within a range of ten square meters in her surroundings.

She only saw that the area inside the stone room had stacks of bookshelves

made from pear tree wood against the wall. Books were placed in twos and threes on the bookshelves, on the books, stuck some more category entries, written with various titles.

Apart from a stone desk in the middle of the stone chamber, it was completely empty. There was nothing else at all.

“Eh, where are Beichen and them?” Su Luo expressed in a very baffled manner.

Didn't everyone rush here because of the secret collection of books? Why was it that she couldn't see even their silhouettes in the secret collection room?

A serious expression flashed across Nangong Liuyun's face, and a careless smile hung at the corner of his mouth: “Lift your head up to look.”

Su Luo followed Nangong Liuyun's words to look up, and couldn't help crying out in surprise: “Ah——”

Above the stone room, hung sphere-like transparent objects, one after another. Su Luo could clearly see that every globe contained a person.

## Chapter 416 – Two-faced bamboo (2)

---

Beichen Ying, Lan Xuan, Anye Ming, the crown prince, Li Aotian, the Jade Lake's Fairy....

There were no less than ten spherical objects, and altogether they imprisoned more than ten people.

It seemed as if they were stuffed into a sack and hung high up in the air, being blown by the wind and thus swaying back and forth. It looked comical and also very distressing at the same time.

The corner of Su Luo's mouth stiffened slightly: "This..." In the end, what had happened?

Nangong Liuyun smiled tenderly and in a bewitchingly charming manner: "This is just the consequences of them fighting for and scrambling to come in first."

The corner of Su Luo's mouth pursed a little and speechlessly took a glance at Nangong Liuyun.

In order to put on a play to act out the entire set, this black-hearted man went as far as not telling Beichen Ying's group about the trap mechanism inside.... Alas, with this kind of friend, it was really their misfortune.

Su Luo was able to see Beichen Ying, naturally, Beichen Ying and them could also see Su Luo through the transparent sphere. Only, he was isolated from the world, and any sound he made couldn't be transmitted outside.

Beichen Ying's eyes were gleaming with tears as he mournfully looked towards Su Luo, the two of them. His expression could be described as extremely pathetic and miserable.

Now, Beichen Ying finally realized, when did Nangong ever eat a little loss from childhood to adulthood? How could he let the crown prince snatch away the

fruits of toil that he had worked towards for a long time? Once he carefully thought about it, he knew that this bastard was certainly scheming something.

Hatefully, they had been too concerned about the disorder and followed right behind the crown prince to rush into the stone room. And what was the result?

The result was that not long after he stepped into the stone room, a mist suddenly welled up from the ground. Very quickly, the mist enveloped the stone room.

At that time, they had only focused on seizing hold of some secret books and didn't pay mind to much else. Who would have thought that in the split second when they reached out to grab the secret books, all of a sudden, a huge transparent bag with mouth spread open would appear underneath their feet and envelop their entire body. Afterwards, with a 'whoosh' sound, when there wasn't even enough time for him to react, he was already tightly tied up in the bag and suspended in mid-air.

The speed of this transparent bag was astonishing, there simply wasn't enough time for an ordinary person to react. They, as sixth rank in strength, in front of this transparent sphere, were just like weak infants, completely lacking the strength to resist.

Now, Beichen Ying had both hands pasted to the transparent sphere, pitifully looking at Su Luo. This image was very similar to a convict locked in prison waiting for someone to visit him. He looked extremely pitiful.

Seeing this scene, Su Luo very heartlessly covered her belly and burst into loud laughter.

This kind of Beichen Ying was too cute, very adorable, too adorable.

Nangong Liuyun's smile was gentle and alluring, as he raised an eyebrow and then asked her: "Are you satisfied with this show?"

In order to obtain a smile from her, just a moment ago, when he removed the seal on the stone door, he deliberately activated the trap mechanism inside the stone room. The first batch of people that went in naturally would suffer a calamity.

Su Luo, with both hands crossed behind her back, walked beneath them,

laughing happily while watching these people constantly struggling within the transparent spheres. Suddenly, she was extremely happy, and having heard what was said, she hurriedly nodded, saying: “Yes, yes, very amusing. For just this scene alone, it was not a waste to come to the Amethyst Fish Palace today, hahaha.”

Especially for the crown prince, having been stared at by Su Luo as if observing an animal in the zoo, it made him extremely embarrassed.

He continually struggled, wanting to jump out. However, the very regretful thing was that he didn't know what kind of material the transparent sphere was made from that when he was just about to stand up, he would slipped back down again. He fell sprawled on his back, that appearance was especially hilarious.

Su Luo covered her stomach and immediately started to laugh uproariously again. Very amusing, simply too amusing...

The crown prince was so infuriated that he started to curse out abuse in the transparent sphere, but not a thread of sound could be transmitted outside. One could only see his mouth constantly opening and closing, rapidly flipping up and down.

Su Luo's gaze swept towards the Jade Lake's Fairy.

## Chapter 417 – Two-faced bamboo (3)

---

She was somewhat curious, under such hard-pressed circumstances, what kind of state would the Jade Lake's Fairy be in? Would she be like a delicate white lotus flower, crying for help from Nangong Liuyun?

The Jade Lake's Fairy's manner was a little beyond and contrary to Su Luo's expectations.

One could see her sitting cross-legged, with eyes tightly closed, seemingly not caring a whit about the outside world, as if she was wholeheartedly immersed in the middle of cultivating. That appearance was indeed the same as an exceedingly refined fairy.

Was the Jade Lake's Fairy really this calm and stress-free, with a serene state of mind?

Su Luo only watched her to see, and after a while, that pair of tightly closed eyes, sure enough, opened a thin crack...

Su Luo saw this and smiled enigmatically.

"Be obedient, don't waste more time. Sort through these secret books carefully and pick a few." Nangong Liuyun rubbed Su Luo's head in a pampering manner, and reminded her with a smile.

These words roused her from the daydream, and Su Luo hurriedly nodded her head.

She could watch their good show at anytime, but she had suffered untold hardships to arrive at the secret collection room. If she wasn't able to bring out even one secret book, then wouldn't that be a huge lose?

Su Luo, with an extremely rapid speed, flashed to the edge of the wall. Her eyes were like electricity as they searched the wall.

“Eh?—” Su Luo’s eyes brightened in a moment when she found a bookshelf with the space system carved on top.

Methods for cultivating space system?

There were actually space system secret cultivation books, this discovery immediately made Su Luo overjoyed beyond her expectations.

It was known that the space system mage was extremely rare on this continent. The space system cultivation methods that were handed down was even more than a few. Even if it was Nangong Liuyun who set out, it was also nearly impossible to find.

Su Luo had the space element system, but besides using her space for storage, it practically had no other use. This was because she basically couldn’t find any secret cultivation books for the space system, therefore she had no way to cultivate it.

But now, such a great opportunity was laid out in front of her...The corner of Su Luo’s mouth hooked into a self-satisfied smile.

Just when Su Luo reached out her hand to grab that secret cultivation book, the people hanging in the air all stared fixedly at her.

Just a moment ago, they were grabbing for the secret books when, without the least time to resist, they were suspended up. Now Su Luo was reaching for it, how could she escape this kind of fate? A taunting sneer hung at the corner of the Jade Lake’s Fairy’s mouth.

Now she was out of luck, but Su Luo would definitely accompany her in the same way of being out of luck. This way, the Jade Lake’s Fairy’s heart would also be tranquil.

On the contrary, Beichen Ying had good intentions, he slapped the transparent sphere’s surface non-stop, trying to warn Su Luo not to grab a secret book.

Because if she grabbed the secret books, she would be suspended in the air like them. Also, once she was suspended up, there was simply no way to escape again. Beichen Ying himself was very worried, whether he would disappear with the Amethyst Fish Place to vanish forever. Therefore, he did not wish for Su Luo to brave this danger.

In fact, how could this simple child know? Nangong, since a long time ago, had already considered all of them to be used as experiment samples.

Just when he was slapping the wall of the transparent sphere non-stop, Su Luo's finger had already made contact with that book of《Space Cultivation Techniques》.

The thing that made everyone gobsmacked was that Su Luo could actually take out that secret book, furthermore, underneath her feet...unexpectedly, nothing appeared to shoot out.

The surroundings was an area of silence.

There weren't any anomalies.

Suddenly.

The crown prince was stupefied.

Beichen Ying was struck dumb.

The Jade Lake's Fairy nearly went insane.

Simply too unfathomable!

Obviously, everyone that touched the secret books, afterwards, they would be punished by being hung up. Why was it just her that wasn't needed to be punished?

In the end, what was going on? Who could tell them, in the end, what was going on?! Why would there be this kind of difference in treatment?!

Could it be that Su Luo really was the illegitimate daughter of the goddess of fortune, so her luck was especially super good?

## Chapter 418 – Two-faced bamboo (4)

---

Jade Lake's Fairy's eyes were opened wide, unwaveringly staring at Su Luo. In that pair of beautiful eyes flashed an endless sinister radiance. Both of her hands were clenched so tightly that her sharp nails dug deeply into her flesh.

Su Luo took《Space Cultivation Technique》not bothering to look through, it she just conveniently put it inside her sleeves. In fact, she had placed it inside her space.

《Demonical Wind Technique》, 《Ten Thousand Glaciers》, 《Weaving Inferno》  
.....

If these secret books were taken outside, each book could stir up all the experts to fight and plunder it. But in here, they were like the most ordinary books, freely tossed in the corner of the bookshelf.

Because each person was limited to take at most seven books, therefore, Su Luo had some difficulty in choosing.

When she couldn't decide, she would ask Nangong Liuyun. The latter would always give her the best answer.

Those persons that were suspended in the air watched Su Luo choose the secret books beneath them in a lively manner with a leisurely attitude, as if strolling around a vegetable market. All of their eyes were filled with admiration, jealousy and hate! They wished and fantasized that the person taking the secret books were themselves!

Normally, if these secret books appeared in the world, it would create a sensation. Yet, at the moment, they seemed to be the cheapest goods from a street stall, casually being cleaned out.

This girl picking secret books should just pick at them, she was also luxuriously

taking one then discarding it!

Discarding a book, then just discard one book. However, those secret books that were tossed to the ground very quickly would change into light smoke, fading away in the room!

It all unexpectedly disappeared immediately!

The people hanging overhead were so jealous that blood almost dripped from their eyes. They were itching to pounce on Su Luo and directly strangle her to death.

Those were secret books, ah, secret books!

Taking it outside, even the worst secret book could be auctioned for a price of five hundred thousand gold coins or more. This loathsome girl was extravagantly tossed it to the ground in passing.

Their hearts were practically weeping blood.

In fact, Su Luo was also helpless.

She did have space, no matter how many secret books there were, she could take it all with her. Although this was so, she also didn't know where this immortal entity was from, to actually stipulate that a person could only take away seven secret books at most.

How would she know? This matter was very simple, when she was taking the eighth secret book, a 'ding dong' sound rang in her head, as if reminding her of this stipulation.

Therefore, Su Luo had no alternative but to pick and choose some. She took out the secret books she swept in her space from before and discarded them. She could only choose more carefully for those with the highest value and the most useful.

Now, the crown prince was so jealous that his eyes seemed to practically be releasing two flames. Afterwards, it ignited into a raging flame!

He unceasingly pounded on the transparent sphere, but no matter how hard he tried, the transparent sphere just wouldn't move a single jot.

Beichen Ying's heart at the moment was going 'ba-thump, ba-thump',

palpitating non-stop.

He stared at Su Luo very tensely and wanted to tell her in a very loud voice that he wanted the water and wind system books. He also was not seeking a lot, he merely beseeched sister-in-law not to forget him and incidentally pick one up for him.

Suddenly, the space between his eyebrows creased slightly, and he cried out in alarm: "Not good!"

At this moment, Su Luo also discovered that something was wrong, and she looked up. Unexpectedly, she found that the first bookshelf and the secret books on it by the wall were enveloped by a thick fog. When the thick fog dispersed, that bookshelf had actually disappeared without reason before everyone's eyes.

Soon after, it was the second bookshelf..... And the third bookshelf.....

"The secret collections are starting to disappear!"

Everyone, without exception, became aware of this point.

Therefore, the people hanging in mid-air become even more anxious, so anxious that their brows were beaded with sweat.

If the secret collection was to disappear, wouldn't it mean that they didn't obtain anything?

Each and every one of them was very anxious, and started to hit and kick the transparent sphere. The transparent sphere however, was just like a ball of cotton, super soft and kept on trapping you, not allowing you to go out.

Su Luo accelerated the movement of her hands.

She had already taken six books, she still had the qualifications for a final book.

All of a sudden, she discovered that her foot had kicked something. She couldn't help but to lower her eyes to look.....

## Chapter 419 – A narrow escape (1)

---

“Eh? What is this thing?” Su Luo crouched down in curiosity, and carefully looked at that fiery red-colored stone.

All of a sudden, she felt her head start to spin with dizziness, as if she was in a trance.

Su Luo abruptly returned to her senses, and with lingering fear, she stared at that piece of fiery red-colored stone.

Something odd was absolutely inside this stone!

Just a moment ago, she had been staring for too long and actually felt that her soul seemed to have been sucked in. It was as if her entire consciousness was about to be controlled, simply giving birth to a restrained fear in her heart.

Su Luo reached out with her hand to pick up this fiery, red-colored stone.

Even though something odd was inside the stone, however, it really had a mysterious power.

She had an indistinct feeling that this stone would be a stroke of luck for her.

“Quickly collect them, there is no time.” Nangong Liuyun, seeing Su Luo crouched on the ground staring off into space, he couldn’t help but to utter a reminder.

“Oh? Oh. Oh!” With this, Su Luo finally returned to her senses. In passing, she conveniently put away that fiery red-colored stone into her space. She planned to leave it for later to carefully examine it again. Presently, the most important thing was to choose secret books.

Yet, when Su Luo’s gaze once more looked towards the bookshelves on the wall, she discovered that more than half of the bookshelves had already disappeared. She only had the time to randomly pull out one last book before

the bookshelf completely disappeared in front of her.

What made people even more dumbfounded was that along with the vanishing bookshelves, the fog in the stone room also started to dissipate. It retreated until the room's radiance was finally restored.

The layer of the transparent sphere that trapped everyone became thinner and thinner, more and more transparent. Finally, with a feeble soft noise, the transparent ball split open.

Li Aotian was the first to jump out. The moment his body was out, with a pounce, he flew to the last remaining bookshelf!

The bookshelf on that wall had already faded away until the very last layer... almost in a blink of an eye, it would disappear.

Just when Li Aotian reached out with his hand, the bookshelf very naughtily disappeared completely and cleanly. The surrounding walls were all restored back to the snow-white walls.

Li Aotian looked at his pair of hands that was completely empty. Immediately, he was furious until his veins burst, and sent a heavy fist smashing towards the wall.

It was unknown what material the walls in the stone room were made from, it was simply too hard. Li Aotian's fist smashed down.

Immediately, his hand was drenched with blood and swelled up greatly, but the wall did not change a bit.

Li Aotian was simply nearly insane from fury!

That pair of eyes was bloodshot, and full of anger, he glared towards Su Luo with a murderous expression!

Why would this loathsome girl have such good luck, yet he couldn't find even a single secret book!

Now, Beichen Ying also came out, having already struggled free.

He was like a flowery butterfly gracefully flying towards Su Luo, with a pair of eyes looking at Su Luo anxiously. Both of his hands were tugging at her sleeves, with pleading tones of a spoiled child, he said: "Sister-in-law, sister-in-law..."

That wishful tone with a still hesitant little appearance, that little expression of acting like a pleading, spoiled child...Even with her eyes closed, she would know the meaning he was conveying.

The grand and stately Venerable president of the Mercenary Union, could he not be this embarrassing?

Su Luo helplessly held up her forehead, in passing, tossed him a secret book she had picked up.

Beichen Ying caught it and took a look, immediately, he became extremely happy!

“Sister-in-law! I love you to death!” Sister-in-law really actually selected a secret book that was suited for him! She picked it.

Boo hoo...very happy, so happy that he seemed to think of giving his heart to her, what's to be done? Would Nangong Liuyun get mad? Beichen Ying furtively cast a glance at Nangong.

Nangong Liuyun's sharp eyebrows wrinkled slightly. He directly reached out an arm to lift up Beichen Ying and cast him aside in passing, like throwing a rag.

However, now it was a fact that Beichen Ying having gotten a secret book!

This time, Lan Xuan and Anye Ming's hearts were no longer calm.

## Chapter 420 – A narrow escape (2)

---

Everyone was childhood friends together, why would sister-in-law only give one to Little Shadow and not them?

It was difficult for them to approach Su Luo, so they could only watch Su Luo from a distance.

On that peerlessly handsome faces was a pair of deep eyes with a pitiful expression, waiting anxiously. Those eyes cast Su Luo a gaze, as if complaining of a secret grudge, clearly, it was accusing her of being unfair. At the same time, it was strongly asking for her to give equal treatment.

Su Luo couldn't help but to hold her forehead.

What are these people ah!

Why was it that each and every one of them wouldn't learn what's proper, but instead followed Nangong Liuyun in being childish! She wasn't an old nanny that took care of them, okay?

Su Luo put one hand on her waist, while she helplessly beckoned them over with the other hand.

Consequently, the two young masters from influential aristocratic families, with faces raised in expectation and jolting buttocks, rapidly ran over to her. At this time, they didn't pay any damn attention to Nangong Liuyun.

Su Luo took two secret books from her space and handed one to each of them: "Here you go, Little Lan's is wind system, Little Ming's is water system, both of you put it away carefully. Don't say I am partial, oh."

Earlier, when she was picking secret books, she had already thought that she must prepare books for them.

"Yes, yes!!!" The two young masters from influential families nodded their

heads hastily. In a kissing-up-to-her manner, they rushed over. One of them fanned Su Luo and the other poured water for her to drink.

How could Nangong Liuyun tolerate these two getting close to Luo girl who belonged under his name. He placed his hands behind his back and stood up. His eyes were like frost as he glared at them.

Following that, the two of them quickly fled in disarray. At once, they voluntarily got lost and arrived at Beichen Ying's side.

As a result, the three good brothers each had a secret book that was suited to them in hand. They stood together in a circle and whispered, so happy that the corner of their mouths were pointed up high. Seeing this, those people that were similarly hung up but did not receive a secret book were so envious to the point of almost going insane.

Su Luo saw their satisfied expressions, and her heart was also somewhat content.

Before, when she was selecting the secret books, these guys' eyes were like searchlights, as if practically stuck to her body. Even if she didn't want to take one for them, they made her feel that she had to.

As for Nangong Liuyun...Su Luo scratched her hair with some doubt.

Before, she was occupied with selecting secret books, so she wasn't paying attention to Nangong Liuyun. She faintly glanced at him from the corner of her eyes and seemed to have seen him not selecting any secret books.

Just when Su Luo was about to ask, the crown prince up ahead brought his henchmen and aggressively walked towards them.

The crown prince's pair of ice-cold eyes stared rigidly at Su Luo, simply wishing he could dismember Su Luo's body into tens of thousands of segments!

He hated her so much!

He practically hated everything to an unprecedented extent.

Originally, everything was well, but ever since this loathsome girl appeared, afterwards, his fortunes started to decline. If those matters were counted one by one, each of them were tears of blood accounts that he could not bear to

recollect.

In the beginning, being duped into a fishing competition where he lost one thousand five hundred green-colored crystal stones.

Afterwards, he was schemed by Nangong Liuyun and was defrauded another one thousand five hundred green-colored crystals stones.

In addition, the Amethyst Crystal Fish he obtained after strenuous effort and with great difficulty, then actually exploded.

If it exploded, then just explode, but it actually caused him to be injured!!!

Su Luo's team had actually walked into the safe passageway by luck. They were unimpeded throughout the entire way to reach the Secret Collection Room while his own team experienced a narrow escape. Finally, most of those experts he brought along had been nearly wiped out.

The matter that made the crown prince most furious until he nearly collapsed was——

He had entered the Secret Collection Room with great difficulty, yet the people on his side were all hung up in midair! Yes, hung up!! Suspended high up in the sky.

Afterwards, he could only look on helplessly as that loathsome girl picked secret books!

If she was properly picking the books, then forget it, but she would pick one and toss one aside. Just that wastefulness, and such extravagance, simply making him want to choke her to death from watching.

With great difficulty, he had gotten out, but all the secret books inside the stone room, without exception, had all disappeared!

## Chapter 421-A narrow escape (3)

---

He could not help but suspect, that this Amethyst Fish Palace was f\*cking opened by this loathsome girl's family! It seemed to have been simply customised and made to order just for her.

Everyone else was just cannon fodder, only she was given great treatment and a journey that was favourable for her till the end.

The crown prince's pair of malicious eyes glared at her unwaveringly. Two raging blazes jumped about in his eyes, that intense fire was itching to fly over and burn Su Luo until nothing was left.

Su Luo didn't even bother to pay him any attention, directly ignoring him. She turned around and said something to Nangong Liuyun in a low voice.

That manner which was as though nobody else was present made the fire in the crown prince's eyes even more vigorous.

He was so infuriated that he reached out with one hand to grab at Su Luo—

However, without waiting for his hands to stretch out, one could only see a brilliant ray flash by them, and suddenly, the crown prince gave a tragic scream.

Looking over again, his already injured right hand, now was drenched in even more blood.

As it turned out, that halo of cold light was produced by Nangong Liuyun.

“Nangong Liuyun! You dare to attack me!” The crown prince aggressively pointed towards Nangong Liuyun. He was like a dense power ready to explode at any time, from head to toe. “Don't forget what you vowed with heaven as witness! This lifetime, you cannot kill me!”

Su Luo's curious gaze looked towards Nangong Liuyun.

If what the crown prince said was real, then under what kind of circumstances was Nangong Liuyun forced to make this kind of oath?

Back then, in the end, what really happened? That Nangong Liuyun would make a promise not to kill the crown prince? And also, to still have affection for the Jade Lake Palace... Su Luo was somewhat curious, somewhat perplexed, and also felt sorry for Nangong Liuyun, having such a bitter experience.

Nangong Liuyun hugged Su Luo, indifferently cast him a glance and nodded, making a show of taking it seriously: "This king has remembered it all along."

"Good that you remember it! Hope you won't forget it for a lifetime!" The crown prince arrogantly and coldly sneered with his chin out in an arrogant and ice-cold manner.

Nangong Liuyun smiled faintly, carelessly considering while holding his chin with an alluring smile that was demonically charming: "To kill someone while not letting them die, yes, doesn't seem that difficult."

The crown prince's body suddenly stiffened like a corpse!

His pair of eyes was firmly fixed upon Nangong Liuyun, wishing he could glare a few bloody holes into his body!

The most important reason why he would stand in front of Nangong Liuyun for so many years, secured in his safety, was not because of his identity as the crown prince/ Rather it was because in the past, Nangong Liuyun, in front of everyone and facing him, had made an oath!

In the future, no matter what he did, Nangong Liuyun would not kill him!

Mainly because of this, these many years, his conduct was unruly and without the slightest scruple. Nangong Liuyun had all along tolerated it with the gaze of a spectator.

However now, Nangong Liuyun had directly opened his mouth to threaten him!

The crown prince's body started to tremble in a split second...His gaze moved from Nangong Liuyun's body to Su Luo's body...

Just because of this loathsome girl, Nangong Liuyun would rebel.

What Li Yaoyao said was correct, this woman could not be allowed to remain alive!

The people with a murderous desire towards Su Luo in their heart, was absolutely not merely the crown prince.

All of a sudden, the surrounding earth quaked like mountains shaking for a period of time!

“Not good! The time has almost reached the limit!” Beichen Ying cried out in alarm to Nangong Liuyun.

Nangong Liuyun frowned slightly, and pulled Su Luo to walk towards the exit.

His Luo girl's speed was too slow, he could only carry her so they would get out in the shortest amount of time.

Just at this time, suddenly, all around was filled with white colored smog. Very quickly, everyone's line of sight became somewhat fuzzy.

Su Luo's good luck seemed to have already been consumed till nothing was left at this moment.

Now, a huge piece of black-colored rock dropped out of the sky and smashed directly towards Su Luo's head.

“Careful!” An anxious expression crossed Nangong Liuyun's eyes, he directly launched himself towards her and pushed Su Luo far away. He used his body to directly cover hers and safely protected her under his wing.

## Chapter 422 – A narrow escape (4)

---

The huge, black-colored boulder smashed down, paused just a little, and then directly rolled towards the position where those two were!

This huge boulder ignored everyone else, as if only possessing endless hatred for Su Luo, clinging to her and not letting her go.

The huge boulder carried sufficient spirit force to engulf everything as it rolled over to crush them!

Whereas, there was only a smooth wall behind her and Nangong Liuyun!

There was no way to avoid it.

Nangong Liuyun, with his back pressed up against the wall, concentrated all the spirit force he had into both his hands to hold off the rolling and crushing force of that huge boulder.

The huge, black-colored boulder was stopped momentarily, but it seemed to be getting angry and roared. It constantly raised its power where it was stopped, the ground echoing with sounds of friction, its strength abruptly increasing dramatically.

Now, the huge boulder was like a crazy magical beast, unreasonably and wholeheartedly moving forward with vigor. Whoever tried to obstruct it, would be killed by it!

Even though Nangong Liuyun's expression was unperturbed without a single ripple, but Su Luo saw that his forehead was coated with a thin layer of perspiration that condensed into beads that tumbled down.

It could clearly be seen that the pressure on Nangong Liuyun was surely very great.

“Go quickly!” Nangong Liuyun burst out and shouted towards Su Luo.

Now, Su Luo's heart was somewhat anxious, however, she didn't listen to his words to leave immediately.

If she was to leave, then what would happen to Nangong Liuyun? His hands only had to loosen a little before he would be crushed by that furious, really huge boulder. At that time, his chances of survival would be bleak.

"Go! Go quickly!" The sweat on Nangong Liuyun's face rolled down continuously.

Those eyes that were eternally glittering with being in control of everything, now were matchlessly imposing.

Beichen Ying and them two saw him like this, also anxiously ran over to help, but their strength compared to that of the huge boulder, differed too greatly.

Just when Su Luo was at her wit's end, the ground produced a burst of creaking noises.

Suddenly——

That wall behind Nangong Liuyun unexpectedly, and without any reason, disappeared. The strength that was supporting his back was immediately gone.

"Nangong!!!" Su Luo urgently charged towards Nangong Liuyun's back, she planned to use her own strength to support his back.

However, Su Luo had only taken the first step before the Jade Lake's Fairy pushed her aside, and only the Jade Lake's Fairy herself ...

"Third senior brother, be careful!" Li Yaoyao quickly threw herself towards Nangong Liuyun, it was as if her entire person was clinging onto his body, firmly holding him.

Su Luo was ruthlessly knocked into the wall, her head became somewhat dizzy.

Just at this moment, suddenly, the huge black-colored boulder gave a world-shaking, bellow and sent out all its strength in a split second, knocking Nangong Liuyun back—— In that moment, Su Luo didn't have enough time to react——

One could only hear the sound of crashing, a smooth wall dropped from the sky and once again filled in the gap where it had become empty.

But Nangong Liuyun, the Jade Lake's Fairy, and also that black-colored, really huge boulder, unexpectedly disappeared without a reason.

That wall fitted in seamlessly, just as if it had never disappeared before.

However, Nangong Liuyun really did vanish.

Su Luo stared blankly at the scene in front of her eyes, and for a split second, couldn't react.

"Oh heavens, this is..." Seeing the words that suddenly appeared on the wall, Beichen Ying was simply stupefied. He turned his head to look at Su Luo with an unimaginably shocked expression.

Su Luo was attracted by his attention, raised her eyes and looked over at him.

However, Beichen Ying jumped up as if his butt was set on fire, and rushed past, leaning his body against the wall, as if he could obstruct the writing on top of the wall this way.

However, how could the movements of the body be faster compared to her gaze?

When Su Luo's gaze focused on the words on the wall, her entire body became motionless with a shocked expression in her eyes.

"This...is impossible." Su Luo shook her head, little by little, her voice was soft and weak, as if she was mumbling to herself.

Lan Xuan and Anye Ming also saw the words on that wall, both of the expressions on their faces were also very complicated. Momentarily, they didn't know what was the best way for them to go and comfort Su Luo.

## Chapter 423 – A narrow escape (5)

---

Lan Xuan opened his mouth, only after a long time was he able to choke out a sentence: “Sister-sister-in-law, you must believe in second older brother!”

Anye Ming’s expression was also heavy at this time, he solemnly nodded his head towards Su Luo: “You should feel reassured, second oldest definitely won’t betray you. You must have faith in yourself, and also, you must have faith in second oldest.”

Now, even if Su Luo was to emphasize that her and Nangong Liuyun’s relationship was innocent, but her heart faintly understood. It was not as if she did not have feelings for Nangong Liuyun.

Su Luo foolishly stared at the wall that was as smooth as a leveled mirror, with her mind completely blank. A trace of pain clutched at the place closest to her heart.

Just a moment ago, she did not misread, on that wall was clearly written three words...

“Hahahahah—” Seeing Su Luo’s dazed appearance, the crown prince suddenly erupted into wild laughter just now!

He was convulsing with laughter, with a kind of expression as if having avenged a great hatred.

One could only see him pointing at Su Luo, laughing until he nearly couldn’t breathe: “Hahahaha—loathsome girl. You can also have today—hahaha—”

The crown prince laughed until he was free from worry and was cocksure. His pair of eyes were without the slightest scruple, tauntingly fixed on Su Luo, full of a mocking overtone.

Su Luo's complexion was as calm as water, nobody could make out that underneath that serene surface appearance, was a roaring sea.

The crown prince once again laughed heartily with hands at his waist: "Bwahaha, ow, the two of them had entered the Joyous Conjugal Room, oh! Loathsome girl, you tell me, what's to be done. The two of them now are right in the middle of completing the ritual of a wedding night."

Su Luo's complexion was gloomy, but she ignored his provocation.

What the crown prince said was not wrong.

Just now, the three words written on the wall that appeared was precisely Joyous Conjugal Room.

Joyous Conjugal Room...who doesn't know the meaning of being inside this room?

The crown prince still felt that it wasn't enough, so he continued to jeer at Su Luo: "Second oldest really does have good fortune, that is the beautiful Jade Lake's Fairy oh. A fairy that a countless number of men yearn for even in their dreams. Just like this, she was conveniently given to second oldest, however, looks like after they get out, I will drink their wedding toast."

The crown prince was too occupied with striking a blow at Su Luo that he nearly forgot the position he was in.

Su Luo's expression was unperturbed and without a ripple. Her pair of tranquil eyes cast him a glance with a smile that was not quite a smile: "Could it be the crown prince forgot? If Nangong and the Jade Lake's Fairy really become an item, under their united strength, the one that will suffer the most loss in benefits will be you, the crown prince, oh."

Having been sobered up by Su Luo's words, the crown prince's complexion immediately stiffened.

He couldn't help but to be somewhat upset, he had really become muddle-headed by his own hatred. The first thing he thought of was to retaliate against this loathsome girl!

What she said was absolutely right, if those two indeed became an item, the

one that would suffer the most damage would more accurately be him.

The crown prince took a furtive glance at Li Aotian, but now, it seemed that Li Aotian was unexpectedly missing!!!

How could he be missing?

Where was Li Aotian hiding? Could it be that he had already abandoned him, the crown prince?

A panicked feeling flashed through the crown prince's heart, but his face was still as tough as before, staring at Su Luo with a mocking-and-making-fun-of-her expression: "This prince had thought to gift you with a side concubine position, but you actually refused. Haha, now, how about this? You think that Nangong Liuyun will still marry you? Simply too ridiculous!"

Su Luo's hands at her side was tightly clenched into fists, but her complexion was indifferent, the corner of her mouth had a slightly cold, smiling expression.

Beichen Ying saw that Su Luo was displeased, immediately, his expression become overcast. He stood in front of Su Luo and with a frown, cast a glance at the crown prince: "You want to court death?"

The crown prince brassily glared at Beichen Ying: "You have the guts to kill me? Don't forget! I am the crown prince of an empire!"

Beichen Ying had both hands crossed in front of his chest, with a ghost of a smile, he said: "What do you think? Just based on a few of you, and think you can get past us in a fight? Do you believe or not that we can immediately kill you and afterwards, destroy your corpse to wipe out any trace of evidence?"

## Chapter 424 – A narrow escape (6)

---

“Beichen Ying, you dare!” The crown prince’s eyes were malicious, he shouted loudly with violent fury.

“As long as we wipe out all of you, who will know it was us who killed all of you?” Beichen Ying seemed to really have this intent, and shot a meaningful glance towards Lan Xuan, them two. The three of them formed a circle and simultaneously approached the crown prince.

The crown prince’s mind became somewhat frantic, pointing at him while cursing in rage: “Beichen Ying! Nangong Liuyun, however, has already made an oath! You guys, don’t come over! You guys stand still by this prince’s orders!”

It was really like what Beichen Ying said, to kill someone here, in order to silence them, this place was simply too suitable.

“Second oldest is second oldest, we are us. We never swore not to kill you oh, stupid crown prince.” Beichen Ying smiled happily as he got nearer to the crown prince, the other two were also getting closer.

A fearful expression came across the crown prince’s eyes.

Nangong Liuyun indeed did swear an oath, however, he didn’t swear it on behalf of these few childhood friends of his.

He knew that these few individuals extremely loathed him, maybe they really would....

The three of them, with Beichen Ying, formed a triangle and surrounded the crown prince who was in the middle. Now, the crown prince looked like a trapped, condemned beast.

Just at this most critical juncture.

Suddenly, from the ground came a slight noise.

“Not good!” Beichen Ying surreptitiously had a bad premonition all of a sudden, he hastily retreated backwards.

Suddenly, this stone room seemed too strange, why was it that there were traps and snares everywhere?

Now, a hole appeared out of the ground from nowhere, it directly swallowed up the three in Beichen Ying’s group, along with the crown prince. The four people simultaneously dropped into the black hole.

In a split second, the four people’s figures vanished without a trace.

In a blink of an eye, the ground once again was restored to its original state. It was as though a black hole had never appeared previously.

Su Luo bit her lower lip and pressed up tightly to the wall, deep worry lines flashed across her eyebrows.

In the end, what was going on? Why was it that people would vanish in an unbroken succession?

It seemed as if imperceptibly, there was a hand manipulating everything, and they were like the chess pieces in the opponent’s palm, being toyed with by him.

Now, there was not much time, and she didn’t know if Beichen Ying and them would meet with a mishap...also, there was Nangong Liuyun...A worried expression flashed through Su Luo’s eyes.

Suddenly.

Su Luo felt that in front of her eyes, it had gone black, a man’s image that stood straight appeared in front of her.

She lifted her eyes and encountered a pair of eyes that was full of maliciousness and rancor.

“Li Aotian!” Su Luo clenched her teeth and exhaled out in a low voice.

Now, the corner of Li Aotian’s mouth burst open in a coldly detached and sneering smile. His sinister gaze stared fixedly at Su Luo, unblinkingly staring at her, and giving a person an eerily strange kind of feeling.

Su felt her back become a little chilled.

Li Aotian finally opened his mouth, his tone was as tender as if speaking to a sweetheart: “What, afraid?”

This kind of Li Aotian was ten times scarier than when he was being coldly detached.

He closed in step by step, Su Luo could only continuously retreat....

What to do? The killing intent in Li Aotian’s eyes were just that obvious, Su Luo could see it with one glance.

He wanted to kill her.

Furthermore, it was not the kind that would be settled with one cut, rather, it was the kind where she would constantly be tormented...until she died.

Su Luo had never once wished she had peerless formidable strength as she did now.

Now, she was only a third rank whereas Li Aotian was a sixth rank. In his eyes, she was a piece of fish meat on top of a chopping block, no matter how he slaughtered, she lacked the strength to resist. .

In his pair of eyes, clearly, he had considered her to be a dead person, a dead person...

Su Luo sucked in a deep breath, her complexion was calm and easy-going. With an indifferent smile, she said: “Li Aotian, why is it that only you are fine?”

“Aren’t you also fine?” Li Aotian forcefully got closer step by step, with a smile that was not a smile, as he approached Su Luo.

## Chapter 425 – A narrow escape (7)

---

“The disappearance of Beichen Ying and them was part of a sinister plot you set up?” Su Luo tried to divert his attention.

Li Aotian, having heard what was said, immediately started to laugh wildly. “Hahaha! Since you are about to die, then I’ll let you become a lucid ghost! Yes, Beichen Ying and them disappeared because of my trick. In fact, it was not limited to this, hahaha, Nangong Liuyun was also put in there by me.”

“You— —that is your younger sister!” Su Luo clenched her teeth, her expression condensed into frost.

“That was Yaoyao’s idea.” Li Aotian smiled very arrogantly, “You thought that good luck would only be yours alone? Let me tell you! Before Yaoyao was hung in mid-air, she already got hold of map with all the traps and snares in this stone room! Humph!”

Only now had Su Luo realized, why she had a kind of feeling of being made a fool in someone’s palm.

As it turned out, when Li Yaoyao first entered, she had already gotten a map of all the traps and snares in this stone room.

Then, she deliberately locked herself and Nangong within the Joyous Conjugal Room...This woman was truly extremely shameless, to actually use this method to force Nangong! .

Still considered herself the exceedingly refined Jade Lake’s Fairy that was above the common people...A burst of nausea surfaced in Su Luo’s thoughts!

Su Luo smiled sarcastically while looking at Li Aotian: “Among the common people, it is circulated that the Jade Lake Palace is noble, virtuous and icily arrogant. Supposed to be secular and detached, but who would have thought

that in order to obtain a man, the majestic Jade Lake's Fairy would actually use such a despicable method. Is she really unable to be married off? To have to coerce and stick to one man like this?"

"You will shut up now!" Li Aotian furiously pinched Su Luo's chin to a stop and hatefully glared at her: "You dare to say such things about Yaoyao. Do you believe I will directly strangle you to death!"

"Don't tell me it isn't so?" A bright light flashed through Su Luo's eyes as she continued to stir up Li Aotian: "Hahaha, are you killing me to silence me? As long as you did something despicable, you would kill them to silence them. Oh, so is this how the reputation of Jade Lake Palace was established? Looks like you guys are also only so-so!"

Li Aotian was extremely enraged by Su Luo, so his hands exerted even more force.

Su Luo was pinched until she nearly couldn't breathe.

However, there was not a single thread of fear in her eyes. Instead, there was a sneering smile in them.

Just when Li Aotian was in the midst of getting more furious, one could see Su Luo lift up her leg and ruthlessly kick towards Li Aotian's family jewels!

No matter what you said, Su Luo was still at the peak of third rank. A kick with all of her strength, that force was not going to be weak.

Let alone the fact that Li Aotian was basically unguarded.

Even more, to say nothing of the higher the level of a person's martial arts cultivation, their entire body would be defended, but that region would always be the weakest existence.

"Ah——" One could only hear the start of a bitterly tragic shout, and Li Aotian immediately released Su Luo. Both of his hands covered that region, he was in so much pain that he nearly fell to the ground and rolled about.

Su Luo's kick succeeded, why would she still dare to stay still?

She let her foot go and started to run!

Run run run!

Now, Nangong Liuyun was not by her side, the only thing she could do was to save herself.

The main culprit of everything was the Jade Lake's Fairy.

Just recalling this woman, a touch of furious intent exploded from Su Luo's eyes.

Last time in Sunset Mountain Range, it was also because of this woman that she was chased all over the mountains and plains to be killed, practically another narrow escape. However, back then, it was merely third ranks chasing to kill her, so she could still somewhat cope with them.

Yet now, the person chasing to kill her was Li Aotian, a sixth rank existence, only heavens knows if she could escape from his pursuit. If she was captured by him, then it would just be tragically miserable.

Su Luo's figure was like lightning, shooting out like an explosion.

Li Aotian has set up an inescapable trap, deliberately separating her from Beichen Ying's group. The only reason was just to kill her. How could he let her so easily escape?

## Chapter 426 – A narrow escape (8)

---

Now, he was kicked again, this time in his family jewels. At that moment, a new animosity was added to the old hatred. A raging inferno and deep murderous intent flashed through Li Aotian's eyes.

If he didn't kill this loathsome girl today, he, Li Aotian, swore he was not human!

Li Aotian endured the sharp pain from the lower part of his body and started to take some strides. With lightning speed, he chased after Su Luo's back.

Li Aotian's sixth rank strength, compared to Su Luo's, was simply as different as night and day. Even though that special placed had been injured, his speed was still very astonishing.

Su Luo ran without stopping.

When she was choosing which path to run on as a way to survive, Su Luo hesitated for a split second, and just picked the fifth passageway.

This was because the other passageways would have magical beast running amok, and although perhaps they could withstand Li Aotian's attack, she was basically unfamiliar with them.

However, the fifth passageway was different.

The reason being was that she knew, this one had a huge foolish tiger. The huge foolish tiger was an eighth rank in strength, as long as she could run to its side, she would absolutely be safe.

Precisely because she had this kind of faith, therefore Su Luo's use of the spirit dance steps was simply like a hurricane in speed.

Li Aotian chased at her back, so angry that he was about to curse her mother.

This loathsome girl must have eaten some special medicinal pills, how could her speed be so fast! Totally unable to tell she had the speed of a third rank.

The her right now, was nearly at the speed of a fifth rank!

However, it didn't matter, this passageway was very long. He had plenty of time to catch her.

Owing to the disparity in their strength, the distance between Li Aotian and Su Luo continuously drew closer. More and more, the gap became smaller, as if nearly in the time it took to reach out a hand, he would close the distance.

Su Luo saw the corner in front of her eyes, and immediately, her heart become joyful.

If she didn't remember it wrongly, that place was where the huge foolish tiger rested. Before, the huge foolish tiger was located right there!

She was saved!

Su Luo speedily turned that corner and entered.

However, what made her despair was— —

Just a moment ago, her persistent motivation since the beginning, that huge foolish tiger she had placed all her hopes on, was unexpectedly missing!

My #@\*&%!? !!!

Su Luo secretly cursed in her heart, simply anxious to the extreme.

She had already been prepared to bribe the huge foolish tiger with a huge amount of Celestial Spirit Water, who would have imagined that it unfortunately was not around to enjoy it!

In the second that Su Luo was distracted, Li Aotian had caught up to her for the kill.

This time, Li Aotain simply did not bother to waste words with Su Luo, his expression was solemn as he formed multiple patterns with both hands. All of a sudden, a vast field of white snow appeared behind his back. Endless amounts of ice and snow were floating all around.

The temperature in the surrounding atmosphere, in a flash, dropped to the

freezing point. The ice-cold, bone-chilling air were like knives, saturating the air.

Very quickly, Su Luo discovered that the top of her hair and her clothing all had white frost forming.

“As expected, quite formidable!” Su Luo was secretly startled.

She never expected that Li Aotian’s attribute was that of a formidable, powerful, murderous ice system mage!

Now, with the pure white snow and bone-chilling wind, Li Aotian was like a god standing in a field of snowfall. His expression was apathetic, his murderous aura undiminished.

“Heavenly dance of snowfall!” Li Aotian shouted in a loud voice.

Immediately, the endless snow and wind from all around, frantically rushed towards Su Luo.

The snowflakes he condensed, every single one of them was the size of a bowl, with sparkling and translucent six sides. Every side of the snowflakes, flashing with cold light, was as sharp as a dagger.

A countless number of dagger-like snow simultaneously pressed towards Su Luo, almost entirely covering her within it.

An astonished expression flashed through Su Luo’s eyes.

As it turned out, a sixth rank expert had this kind of strength.

Compared to her strength, she simply could not withstand a single blow.

Regardless, things had already reached this point, she had no choice but to go all out!

Su Luo was definitely not someone who would give up easily.

One could see that her expression was coldly focused, a streak of black-colored handprint floated above her head and was rapidly enlarging, warding off things for her who were underneath it.

## Chapter 427 – A narrow escape (9)

---

“Humph! A small third rank dares to resist my Heavenly Dance of Snowfall? Keep dreaming!” Li Aotian stood with his hands behind his back, with an expression of cold indifference and arrogance.

Su Luo only heard a rumbling noise, and endless wind and snow swept towards her, wrapping around her.

So much so, that even her great Dimensional Imprint was also wrapped up in it.

The ground was shaking, nearly all the walls were already covered by white frost.

It was an extremely frightening cold stream with strength sufficient to destroy everything; it nearly couldn't be resisted.

Almost in the blink of an eye, her great handprint was immediately transformed into dust, vanishing in the air.

Moreover, Su Luo's entire person then became frozen inside the ice. Afterwards, what emerged before Li Aotian's eyes was an ice-cold, human-shaped sculpture.

The sculpture shone with white light and flickered in the cold air.

You could clearly see Su Luo within the ice sculpture.

The Su Luo right now had one leg lifted, like the one-legged Golden Rooster stance in Tai Chi. Both of her hands were arranged in a proper fighting stance, and she was frozen in this stance, motionlessly fixed in place. She seemed really miserable, but also very amusing.

At this moment, Li Aotian's expression was haughty, arrogant and ice-cold.

He walked forward a few steps and with a ghost of a smile, he looked at Su Luo who was frozen inside, the corners of his mouth producing a taunting sneer.

“Loathsome girl! You also have a day like today.” Li Aotian pondered, holding his chin, going around Su Luo, this ice sculpture, in circles. He walked while simultaneously clicking his tongue, “This pose is still very interesting, if this was placed outside for everyone to enjoy, it should also be pretty good.”

Although Su Luo was sealed inside, her ears, however, were not deaf.

She could see her current distressful appearance in Li Aotian’s meaningful glance.

Li Aotian stood in front of Su Luo, and suddenly, a light flashed across his eyes. He thought up an extremely delightful idea.

“Consider you, loathsome girl, as having good luck. This time, I really can’t kill you, that will be a loss for your excellent body.” Li Aotian coldly laughed, “If Nangong Liuyun saw you with a stitch of clothing in a frozen sculpture, that was then placed in the street for people to look, surely, no matter how much he likes you, he also would not want you, such a loathsome girl, again.”

A touch of rage flashed through Su Luo’s heart!

In the beginning, she merely thought that Li Aotian was only icily arrogant, she didn’t expect he would be so perverted. This kind of perverted plan, only he would think of it!

However, no fury could be seen in Su Luo’s eyes.

As far as this plan was concerned, to her, it was not bad. At least, it would give her a final period of time to strive for freedom.

Li Aotian thought a bit more, ultimately, he still decided to temporarily leave Su Luo alive. This was due to the fact that, if he was to directly kill her, it would not be as pleasurable as completely mistreating her.

Li Aotian also didn’t free Su Luo from the ice prison. He merely extended his long arm and easily carried Su Luo, who was shaped like a statue, on his shoulder. Afterwards, he traveled in the direction towards the outside of the palace.

In fact, Su Luo really wanted to ask him out loud, wasn't he worried about his younger sister?

Could he really allow the Jade Lake's Fairy to stupidly stay in that Joyous Conjugal Room?

After all, the time limit in this Amethyst Fish Palace was almost at the end.

However, seeing Li Aotian's completely unconcerned expression, Su Luo just knew that Nangong Liuyun ought to be alright.

Only, she don't know...if he would be able to keep holding on.

With the Jade Lake's Fairy's, that kind of looks, it would not be easy to continue holding on, resisting...

A complicated light flashed through Su Luo's eyes.

Nonetheless, now, the most important thing was her own safety.

Li Aotian's notion was so perverted, if her movements were stopped by him, then she might as well smash her head into something to die.

As long as she thought of herself without a stitch of clothing being placed on the street for people to look, Su Luo would feel her scalp go numb.

All of a sudden, Su Luo recalled the last time she was chased to be killed, and what the servant of the Jade Lake's Fairy had said.

## Chapter 428 – A narrow escape (10)

---

The Jade Lake Palace had a type of drug that could control a person's mind, at that time, the consequences would be too horrible to contemplate.

Now, she was still fortunate, if she was to end up in the Jade Lake's Fairy's hand...Su Luo shivered a little.

Alas, it was just like what she said before, relying on a mountain, it collapses, depending on a person, they run, the most dependable people and thing to rely on is herself!

No good, she could not mope on like this, she must save herself.

Su Luo, while being carried on Li Aotian's shoulder, her mind suffered from the invasion of cold air, and worked somewhat slowly.

Even then, she still thought of an idea that would not be considered a plan.

Before, Su Luo had already tested it because she was a fire elemental system, therefore, she could use her own fire system to melt this layer of ice.

But what made her despair was that after she had tried hard for a long time, she only melted a little of the ice. If she was truly to thaw out, at that time, the golden needles (1) dish would be cold. By then, she would have already been peeled naked, broken into pieces, and put on display.

However, Su Luo's slow brain finally worked out something right.

She concentrated all of the spirit power from her fire system into her right hand.

First, wherever the ice layer seemed to be, it was thinner relative to other places.

Second, as long as there was an opportunity for her right hand to make a

move, and as long as Li Aotian was unguarded, then there was still a chance for her to escape, going to heaven in order to live.

Therefore, while Li Aotian carried her with flying speed, hurrying on his journey to return, Su Luo merely held her breath, with rapt attention condensing all of her spirit power into her right hand.

It would be difficult to thaw out her entire body, but if it was only one point, then it was not impossible.

After approximately a little less than an hour had passed.

Up ahead, was finally the gate to the main hall of the palace.

The gate to the main hall was wide open, giving people an empty, bleak feeling.

Su Luo saw this and couldn't help but sigh with sorrow and regret.

She still remembered that less than a day ago, there were many people that stood in front of this gate to the main hall. Yet now, stepping out of the main hall's gate was only her and Li Aotian, two people.

When Li Aotian stepped outside of the main hall's gate, there was only a little bit left of the layer of ice on Su Luo's palm.

Because she didn't want Li Aotian to detect it, while Su Luo was thawing the ice layer, she also put away the water droplets into her space at the same time. This was the reason why Li Aotian still hadn't detected the thawing.

However, after exiting the gate of the main hall, Li Aotian suddenly looked towards Su Luo. During the time he wanted to speak with her, from the corner of his eyes, he just so happened to see that her hand had broken through the layer of ice.

Immediately, Su Luo's heart trembled apprehensively.

No sooner said, and it happened!

In a flash, Su Luo tossed that spirit pinball she had wanted to use countless times before, and only to get to use it now into the back of Li Aotian's collar. When she tossed out the spirit pinball, she also used her spirit power to ignite that spirit pinball.

“Loathsome girl! What did you do!” It would never have occurred to Li Aotian that Su Luo actually still had the strength to resist. He used all of his strength to throw Su Luo, and she was tossed out heavily.

The pitiful Su Luo, still in the form of an ice sculpture, landed heavily on the ground. Because the ground was smooth and flat, and Li Aotian’s strength was also very strong, the pitiful Su Luo immediately slid to the fringe of the public square.

Beyond the fringe of the public square was the endless ocean.

If you were to ask whether Li Aotian was miserable or not...only the words ‘super miserable’ could be used to describe him.

The spirit pinball was a seventh rank expert’s last strike, how formidable was its strength? To say nothing of the fact, that Li Aotian was only a sixth rank.

In fact, when Su Luo tossed that spirit pinball into the back of his neck, he had already realized what it was. It was too late for him to think about it carefully, subconsciously, he ran towards the sea.

With the spirit pinball, only through jumping into water, and utilizing the resistance of water, would he have an opportunity to live.

“Bang——” A loud, violent noise exploded on the surface of the sea.

A joyful feeling flashed through Su Luo’s heart.

Li Aotian, don’t tell me that this time, I still won’t be able to blow you up to death!

But celebrating too soon, things still could go wrong, this sentence came true in Su Luo’s hand, and it was extremely fitting.

*1) Golden needles is a type of dried flower known as the citron daylily, that Chinese people use in their stir fry. It is supposed to be good for your health.*

## Chapter 429 – A new lease on life (1)

---

Su Luo had celebrated too soon.

Her good luck had all been consumed and used up from before, the remaining was all misfortune.

The spirit pinball exploded with a tremendous might. Li Aotian's entire person was blown until he couldn't be seen.

However, Su Luo had overlooked the follow-up to after the spirit pinball exploded, and this follow-up had a huge effect on her.

At the point of explosion, in that split second, one could see that in the surroundings, there was a huge wave immediately overflowing to the sky. It unfurled and swung up a huge mass of ocean spray. A crashing sound echoed, like a wild beast spreading open in all directions.

Before, Su Luo had been heavily thrown away by Li Aotian, moreover, she had slid along the smooth surface of the public square to its fringe.

In fact, at that time, Su Luo already had one foot placed horizontally over the sea surface. With only a slight blow of the wind, like the movement of a blade of grass, she would be blown into the sea water.

Furthermore, right now, it was a huge wave that overflowed to the sky, carrying with it a cold wind that swept towards her!

A shocked, terrified expression flashed through Su Luo's eyes. Her heart was so regretful that her intestines turned green. Finished, finished...

Those fingers that broke through the layer of ice tenaciously dug into the ground at the fringe of the public square. She simply joined all of her strength and used it. If she let go, she would drop into the sea.

However, it was unfortunate that there were only two fingers that had broken

through the layer of ice, and it was not her entire hand. Therefore, its strength seemed very small.

When the screams of each and every ocean spray swept towards her, Su Luo had repeatedly persevered, but she couldn't continue to persevere on. The fingers broke away from the rock on the shore. Afterwards, she stared on helplessly, as she, in the state of an ice sculpture, with a thunderous splash sound, was directly swept up by the waves of the sea....

The density of ice was lower than seawater, therefore Su Luo, in the state of an ice sculpture, floated on the sea surface and did not directly sink to the seafloor. This was the greatest luck among her misfortune.

But what made her feel painful and tragic was——

The yacht that was just up ahead, was at a distance that was almost within reach.

But——

With one slap from the ocean spray, she watched helplessly as she was washed away. She also looked on helplessly as she floated away in the opposite direction from where the yacht was anchored. She stared blankly as she anticipated her fate, on the verge of being set adrift on the sea surface.

This was simply too heartbreaking, too depressing...Su Luo was so helpless that she almost cried.

The East Sea was vast and had no boundary, only heaven knew where she would be swept to...As long as she thought about this, immediately, two wide, noodle-like bands of tears silently flowed down on the face of the icebound Su Luo.

However, what could merely two of her fingers do? Within this endless sea, she could only resign herself to her fate of drifting among the waves.

In front of mother nature, her tiny speck of strength was completely without the ability to resist.

The pitiful her was completely unaware, that this was merely only the beginning of her misfortune.

Now, it was night-time.

In the lonely night sky, not even the remnant of a star could be seen. Even the dim crescent moon was obstructed by thick layer of clouds. All around, it was pitch-black, you couldn't even see the fingers on your hand in front of you.

Su Luo's heart could said to be very sorrowful right now.

Being slapped around by seawater, she was crooked to the east, then fell to the west in total disorder. It was fine if it was only drifting with the waves, but why even the opportunity to lie on the sea surface to enjoy the beautiful night scenery was not given to her?

She didn't know what direction she was floating towards...Su Luo fell more and more into despair, gradually becoming somewhat sleepy.

Yet, when Su Luo didn't expect it, an even more tragic thing happened.

Suddenly— —

A streak of lightning, as fast as a serpent dragon, left behind a harsh radiance when time was about to change in the horizon.

Now, a bad premonition all of a sudden bubbled forth from her heart.

It couldn't be what she thought it was, right? It couldn't be that bad, right? Could she just so happen to be in time for the raising waves of a tropical cyclone in the ocean?

However, the most tragic thing didn't exist, what existed was only even more tragedy.

It could be said that when a person was out of luck, even drinking water, food could get stuck in the cracks between the teeth. Su Luo was just such a model for that kind of person.

## Chapter 430 – A new lease on life (2)

---

Very quickly, on the sea surface, lightning and thunder mixed together and a huge gale erupted. It was like a ferocious beast producing thunderous roars, making the people who heard it tremble with fear.

The originally drowsy Su Luo was immediately startled awake.

Just at this moment, lightning streaked past, following right after was a scorched smell then the thunder overhead directly smashed down!

However, the peal of thunder left no time for her to prepare nor cover her ears.

With an imposing and majestic manner, it directly struck on the ice sculpture of Su Luo.

Fortunately, she was concealed away within a very thick layer of ice, otherwise, a person would swiftly be hacked into a charred mess.

But even so, it still scared Su Luo enough.

One could only hear the surface layer of her ice sculpture issuing sizzling sounds of 'sss' that lingered on.

Yet, this was merely the beginning. In this pitch-black night, Su Luo, who was floating on the sea surface, really, truly experienced what was called a hair-raising, violent tempest.

She, who was frozen within the ice sculpture, could see through the layer of ice, the flashing lightning and rolling thunder with torrents of rain.

She saw the lightning dancing in the horizon like a dragon serpent, bellowing and snarling.

She saw the torrential rain pouring down in buckets and beating upon the sea

surface, each and every one of them forming a deep hole.

And her ice block was like a small skiff, slapped by the waves, rocking about and swaying, sliding to the east then falling to the west.

When the huge wave swept her up, it was the same as being on a roller coaster. She was rolled up and lifted up high, nearly several tens of meters above the sea surface.

When the huge wave rolled down, she was again heavily thrown down without the least bit of sympathy.

Despite being hidden in the ice layer, Su Luo was still thrown about until she was dizzy and confused while being light-headed.

Su Luo felt that she had been forced to suffer extreme bitterness.

At this moment, she was being slapped around and rammed until she simply didn't know her own orientation. She could only hope that she didn't get swept into the waterspout region, otherwise, if she was sucked into the waterspout, then she really would be done for.

This night, Su Luo could only helplessly allow the huge waves and the gale to ravage her. But she had no other alternative, so she could only try to find joy in the sorrow and think that this was a free-of-charge roller coaster in the ancient times.

Fortunately though, she was now frozen in a layer of ice, her entire body was protected. The force of impact from the waves did not injury her, if not, this night would seriously be extremely difficult.

Gradually, Su Luo started to feel the meaning of being trapped.

The tide with the howling winds and torrential rain gradually settled down. Her psyche unwittingly relaxed, and her eyes started to close as she fell asleep.

The she that had fallen asleep, was completely unaware that a person was calling for her throughout this journey.

When she opened her eyes once more, it was because she had been woken up by the burning sun.

Su Luo opened her eyes to glance at the environment in her surroundings,

immediately, excitement flashed through her eyes.

She actually caught sight of a black dot up ahead, since she was separated from it by a large distance, she couldn't see it clearly.

But to be able to see a black dot on the ocean's surface, it was either a vessel or an island. It was still much better when compared to just drifting aimlessly on the ocean.

Su Luo used her two fingers and stroked forward with all her strength.

Last night was filled with high wind and pressing waves, her two fingers could not be used, but now, the waves on the sea surface were not that big.

Su Luo continued to row ah, row forward with all her effort...

With great difficulty, she rowed about ten meters forward. Then, a wave came at her in a head-on collision.

The pitiful Su Luo was immediately rolled backwards by about twenty meters by the wave.

Su Luo's heart silently flowed with two noodle-like, broad strips of tears. But very quickly, she pulled herself together and spared no effort to move forward by row ah, row...

Afterwards, another wave hit her head-on and pushed her back even further.

Su Luo simply wanted to look up to the sky and hiss for a long time!

What kind of toying with her was taking shape! Even using a swing, was not played with this kind of method!

Was it because before, she had overdrawn her good luck, so now she needed to use misfortune to settle the debt. It was simply.... too much! Su Luo angrily stuck up her middle finger at the Heavens.

## Chapter 431 – A new lease on life (3)

---

Also, didn't know whether or not it was because the Heavens sensed Su Luo's furious intent.

Not long after, the wind and waves on the ocean changed directions.

The waves started to push at Su Luo's back, pushing her continuously forward.

Could it be that the Heavens finally grew some eyes, turning her extreme sorrow to joy?

Finally, Su Luo's heart was somewhat satisfied.

With the help of the tides, Su Luo's operation became much easier, the distance to that targeted black dot also become increasingly closer.

Now, Su Luo could clearly see, that this was indeed not some vessel, but rather, a not-very-large, barren island.

The barren island was surrounded with submerged rocks, these submerged rocks were regarded as the natural enemies of vessels. However, as far as she was concerned, they were of the greatest help to her.

She looked on just as the wind direction was about to change.

In order not to allow the previous tragedy to occur again, Su Luo used her two fingers to row, striving with everything she had to aim towards the shore.

Whenever the tide would send her off with a push at her back to move forward, she would borrow its strength to rush forward. And when the tide had fallen back, she had a death grip on the surrounding rocks and wouldn't let go.

Waiting for another set of waves to send her off, she would then once again strive to rush forward with all her strength.

In this way, the cycle was repeated and efficiency was improved by a lot.

She tried hard for about an hour, and just when Su Luo's two fingers were inflamed and about to rupture, she finally touched the beach.

After being adrift on the ocean, she now truly perceived how beautiful it felt to have one's feet firmly planted on land.

However, even if it was just floated onto the sandy beach, Su Luo was still in that ice-sculpture condition. This was a fact she couldn't change.

She also didn't know how hard this icy and snowy trap of Li Aotian's was.

For this entire night, she had been blown by the wind, battered by the rain, and with lightning flashing and thunder rolling. Moreover, there were huge waves that overflowed to the sky, and she had been ravaged simultaneously under all these conditions. Yet, this ice sculpture was still as before, without a trace of thawing.

Even though Su Luo never abandoned the idea of blowing it up with spirit power, but having tried hard for this long, she could only extend out a few fingers and nothing more. Her body was still as before, trapped inside, as if her entire body was cast in plaster.

On the sandy shore, the seawater retreated. Su Luo was lying down, unmoving, with her head raised to look at the setting sun, her eyes silently shedding tears.

How could she continue on like this?

If she stayed too long inside the ice sculpture, her body also wouldn't be able to withstand it.

Besides, what's more, since coming out of her closed door cultivation to now, no water and rice had entered her. Now, her belly was positively starving, that it was directly making rumbling noises.

The problem was that even if there were stuff to eat, now, her entire person was trapped within an ice sculpture, with no way for her to eat...

Alas, when a person start to have bad luck, how could they be this feeble?

Just when Su Luo was full of remorse, suddenly, she felt a shadow appear from above. Could it be that the sky would get dark this fast?

Su Luo had no other choice but to open her eyes——

How could it be possible?!

When she saw the person before her eyes, Su Luo felt it was simply too incredulous.

She only saw his expensive and full-of-noble-air, black-colored brocade robe, cut apart into pieces by the submerged rock. That peerlessly handsome face, that pair of demonically charming, peach blossom eyes that loved to smile, and also that perfect pair of moist lips...Now, it was just tilting up slightly, looking at her and smiling.

“Nangong Liuyun?!” Su Luo simply could not believe it!

This matter changed too fast, she simply had no time to react.

Wasn't Nangong Liuyun locked in the Joyous Conjugal Room due to the Jade Lake's Fairy's plan? How could he possibly appear here? Definitely, it was because she had been sunbathing for too long that she was faint with blurred vision, and thus the hallucination appeared, right?

The next second, Su Luo wanted to reach out and rub her eyes, and annoyedly discovered that the her right now like a mummy, she basically was unable to move.

The corner of Nangong Liuyun's mouth was raised in a constipated smile, and acting as if taking things seriously, he even used a finger to tap the layer of ice. Pleased as punch, he gave one sentence in assessment: “The quality is still not bad.”

Under the twilight of the setting sun, his overbearing tone also carried a touch of lazy flavor.

And also, that annoying smile on his face, even if she was transformed into ash, Su Luo was also unlikely to remember it wrongly.

## Chapter 432 – A new lease on life (4)

---

This person was definitely Nangong Liuyun, the authentic one.

Now in the ice sculpture, how could Nangong Liuyun neglect to take into account the most important point was to hurriedly get her out of there!

Here Su Luo was nearly unable to hold back anymore okay?

Consequently, Su Luo scowled fiercely inside the ice sculpture as righteous indignation filled her chest and she shouted: “Why haven’t you still let this young lady out!”

Nangong Liuyun gave a nefariously charming smile, slowly shaking his head: “Can’t hear you.”

“Courting death, aren’t you!” Su Luo said in a rage.

“Only if you promise this king one condition.” Nangong Liuyun very seriously sat down by Su Luo’s side, turning his head to look at Su Luo with an appearance of sitting side by side, wanting to have a long talk.

Su Luo was nearly close to being infuriated to death. What kind of time was this moment? And he was still playing this game with her.

“Your words, this king can’t hear, however, if you agree to the promise, then you can blink your eyes three times.” Nangong Liuyun’s somewhat pale face had a full, constipated smile.

Su Luo’s heart was indignant, this guy was simply profiting from her misfortune!

And he still said he liked her. If he liked her, he should dash to her side and undo the layer of ice without saying anything further.

“Oh dear, why do you like to stay inside, then this king will sit here to

accompany you.” Nangong Liuyun’s pair of hand intersected behind his head and at Su Luo’s side, he laid on his back on the sandy beach. His smile was full of a demonic aura.

Su Luo was simply defeated by him.

A tiger that had fallen down to earth being insulted by dogs, this debt, she definitely will get it back.

The corner of Nangong Liuyun’s mouth hooked into a concentrated smile, holding his chin in a considering pose: “Oh dear...thinking of what condition will be good? How about just letting you marry this king?”

Seeing Su Luo’s gaze betray an ominous glint, Nangong Liuyun’s smile became even more devilishly charming and alluring: “No good, no good, it has a tone of bullying the weak. This king is definitely not Nangong Liujue, that useless person, who would force a marriage. Okay...How about like this? You agree to try to be together with this king for three months, how about it?”

Try to be together for three months? Su Luo frowned.

Nangong Liuyun saw that Su Luo was considering it, this meant that there was a chance.

Consequently, he struck while the iron was hot and continued to hit the snake with a stick, “Just this try to be together for three months, if when the time comes, you still don’t like this king, then this king will absolutely not stick to you anymore, how about it?” But the way he pursued her would be changed to force.

Su Luo, however, did not know Nangong Liuyun’s shameless thought in his heart. She thought it over with rapt attention: If it was only three months, then that could be considered...

Nangong Liuyun pretended to be very bored as he tapped the layer of ice. The ice sculpture echoed ‘thud, thud’, his smile was still devilishly charming while he raised an eyebrow and laughingly said: “This posture, tsk tsk tsk, is indeed rarely seen. Since you like to show it, then just...”

This made Su Luo, who was lying in the ice sculpture, extremely vexed!

She also knew that she had assumed the appearance and pose of the Golden Rooster standing on one leg, very comical and very funny. But how was she to know that back then, she would be frozen over.

If she had known earlier, she would definitely have chosen a more perfect, beautiful posture...pooh, pooh, if she had known earlier, when Nangong Liuyun was there for support, she would have gotten rid of Li Aotian.

Nangong Liuyun took the opportunity to profit from her misfortune, and added on additional promises and threats. His tone even carried a concerned flavor: "Oh dear, looks like the tide is about to rise and fall again, with you like this, I'm afraid you will be swept away again, right?"

Su Luo's heart was extremely furious, in any case, everyone had known each other for this long, must he force her to agree before being willing to give her a helping hand? He was simply a bandit.

Abominable and hateful.

Su Luo was forced with no way out, she could only pant with rage and severely blinked her eyes three times towards him...

Upon seeing this, the corner of Nangong Liuyun's mouth revealed a demonic smile of having gotten his way. He had an extremely joyful expression.

## Chapter 433 – A new lease on life (5)

However, Su Luo waited for quite a while, seeing that Nangong Liuyun was still sitting there neatly, she couldn't help but frown. Afterwards, she carefully scanned his complexion.

Before, she was too busy being mad that she didn't get a good look. Now that she looked at him carefully, she found that his complexion was not in a good condition. He was overly pale.

Could it have anything to do with her vision being obstructed by the layer of ice? Su Luo thought with some doubts.

After another long period had passed, Nangong Liuyun finally got up.

His palm flipped over with a flying gesture, continuously forming, one after another, fiery red-colored imprints. Specks of fiery blaze landed on the ice sculpture, letting the flames melt the layer of ice.

Su Luo felt it was somewhat strange.

Normally, according to Nangong Liuyun's strength, he shouldn't have just produced such small flames.

He was much stronger compared to Li Aotian, Li Aotian was sixth rank while he was seventh rank. Li Aotian's Heavenly Dance of Snowfall, as far as he was concerned, would only take a minute to undo.

But now, it had been more than an hour, Nangong Liuyun, the little flames he condensed out were still burning....making the length of time it persisted in undoing the ice excessively long.

This night...In the end, what happened to his body?

Could it be that just a moment ago when he was talking to her, it was for the purpose of stalling for time in order to restore the vital energy in his body?

There was a myriad of thoughts in Su Luo's mind, with many huge question marks on top of her forehead. However now, she was frozen over, no matter how you said it, she couldn't ask. She had no other choice but to wait patiently, to wait until she got out to ask.

Approximately another hour passed, suddenly, a thread of blood flowed out of the corner of Nangong Liuyun's mouth.

Su Luo's mind was abruptly jolted!

Nangong Liuyun was certainly injured! Otherwise, breaking a layer of ice wouldn't injure him in this way.

She shouted loudly for Nangong Liuyun to stop, even though her voice couldn't be transmitted out, but she still kept on mouthing the words.

Nangong Liuyun wiped away the blood at the corner of his mouth and only smiled faintly while saying one sentence: "If I was to stop now, the agreement from a moment ago would be invalid."

Su Luo was immediately anxious.

Nangong Liuyun's condition right now was very bad, even his body was tottering on the verge of collapse, so weak as to make a person's heart ache in distress.

Even though all along, he had stubbornly propped himself up, but his hands trembled slightly, while cold sweat tumbled down drop by drop.

Again, another hour passed, at last, the piece of ice layer finally broke off.

All of a sudden, Su Luo's body regained its freedom.

When Nangong Liuyun saw Su Luo come out, he finally let out a breath of relief, his Luo girl had finally come out.

Nangong Liuyun had been full of dread for a period of time, and the soles of his feet staggered slightly. Su Luo threw herself at him, wanting to support him, but now, her limbs were still stiff, and as a result, the both of them tumbled down onto the sandy shore.

Now, Nangong Liuyun could not continue to suppress it, and he uttered heavy coughs.

Along with the sound of coughing, fresh blood continuously spilled out of his mouth.

One mouthful after another, the blood sprayed out as if he didn't want to live.

Upon seeing this, Su Luo's heart was exceedingly distressed, but she was completely clueless and could only anxiously wait by his side.

With great difficulty, she waited for him to finish throwing up blood, and only now was Su Luo able to support him up. Her eyes were full of heartache, on one hand helping him to wipe clean the bloodstain at the corner of his mouth, while also trying to stop him: "I know that right now, you have a lot you want to say, but the timing is wrong. First, don't speak, you should properly rest and adjust your body."

Nangong Liuyun's phoenix eyes blurred, he was half-unconscious and half-awake. He only looked at Su Luo while smiling, and struggled to talk: "You... promised..."

This man, even at this moment, was still concerned about that promise! Even so obviously, when he was about to die!

Su Luo was so infuriated that she glared at him: "Got it, the things I, Su Luo, promised, I will absolutely not renege on. Isn't it just three months? I've memorized it all."

This matter of swindling her into an agreement of three months of commitment, she absolutely would demand this debt back.

## Chapter 434 – A new lease on life (6)

---

Su Luo took out a cup of Celestial Spirit Water from her space, and little by little, fed it into Nangong Liuyun's mouth: "Come, drink this."

At this point of time, Nangong Liuyun's behavior was very clever and obedient, he laid on Su Luo's lap, and following Su Luo's hand, he drank the water, one mouthful at a time, until it was gone.

After drinking Celestial Spirit Water, his complexion improved somewhat, his eyelids became increasingly heavy, and very quickly, he sank into a deep sleep.

Only now did Su Luo have an opportunity to size up Nangong Liuyun.

His complexion at this moment was horribly pale, the clothing on his body was also rather conspicuously bedraggled. His pair of hands had been soaked in seawater until they were swollen. Compared to that noble and arrogant His Highness Prince Jin from before, it was two entirely different people.

In fact, Su Luo really wanted to ask, in the end, did something take place in the Joyous Conjugal Room...But faced with Nangong Liuyun like this, she felt that asking him this sentence was an insult to him.

She continued to take care of him, and did not sleep for that night.

Early morning on the second day, under the first light of dawn, the two people slowly, while turning about, started to wake up.

After drinking that cup of Celestial Spirit Water, Nangong Liuyun's mental alertness had improved somewhat. Nonetheless, his complexion was still as horribly pale as before, seemingly about to collapse from excessive blood loss.

When Su Luo opened her eyes, she saw his body leaning on its side, one hand supporting his forehead. His gaze was earnestly and seriously sizing her up, the him right now was like a gentle and tender fire.

Su Luo rubbed her eyes, and grumbled a verse: “What are you doing?”

Nangong Liuyun seemed to be a little unhappy, and as before, glared at Su Luo in a huff.

Su Luo was even more bewildered, first thing in the morning, why was it that this man was like a little child, again, what was he getting petulant about?

However, seeing that he had suffered a heavy injury, Su Luo did not begrudge his manner. She merely asked one sentence: “In the end, what are you mad about?”

Nangong Liuyun did not speak, flattened his mouth, not speaking. He used his eyes to convey his complaint.

Su Luo was simply somewhat at a loss, asking him and he won't speak, then, what else could be done?

Su Luo helplessly stretched, rubbing her belly, she said: “Very hungry.”

Nangong Liuyun somewhat very fiercely said: “Su Luo, from now on, you are not allowed to say you are hungry to a man.”

“Eh?” Su Luo somewhat perplexedly looked at him.

“Only allowed to say it to this king!” Nangong Liuyun said, full of arrogance and with a lovable overtone.

“Such behavior.” Su Luo irritatedly snorted.

Compared to before when she was trapped like a mummy in the ice sculpture, the feeling at this moment of having her feet planted on solid ground was really great. Su Luo inhaled a deep breath of fresh and clean air and turned around to ask Nangong Liuyun: “Is your body a little better?”

“Now you know to be concerned about this king? Humph, too late.” Nangong Liuyun turned his face away.

Su Luo was made amused by his childishness.

Was it possible that he was peeved in the early morning because she didn't seem concerned about him? Yet last night, she had clearly kept a watch on him for a night, until finally, she couldn't remain awake and fell into a deep sleep.

Su Luo gave him a quick stare: “I was concerned about you all along, okay? Don’t be so lacking in conscience like this.”

She used a nice tone and good mood to coax him. He was still throwing a tantrum, but with Su Luo glaring at him, it had obtained an entirely different result. All of a sudden, Nangong Liuyun sat up with a happy expression across his entire face, full of conceit: “Say it, in what ways were you concerned about this king?”

“Does preparing to find food for you count?” Su Luo did not feel like competing with this childish man.

He merely looked at her with that pale face lacking any blood, don’t know why, but in the depths of her heart, pain still gripped it tightly.

“I want to eat congee!” Nangong Liuyun made a request and still seriously reminded her: “Shredded chicken congee that is boiled very thick and sticky.”

Yesterday, he was still in an unconscious state with an about-to-die appearance, today, he was immediately in great spirits?

## Chapter 435 – A new lease on life (7)

---

Su Luo exasperatedly rolled her eyes at him and then pointed to the surroundings: “Your Highness Prince Jin darling, trouble you to open your noble eyes and see what kind of place this is. Still want shredded chicken congee, if you have the resourcefulness, then transform some rice out, okay?”

“Don’t you have space?” Nangong Liuyun said it, as if it was obvious.

“But I didn’t store any rice in my space.” Su Luo very naturally responded to his question.

Nangong Liuyun immediately grabbed on to the critical part of the problem and sharply pointed straight at the main point: “Don’t tell me, you didn’t put any food in your space?”

Su Luo’s expression froze for a second, slowly and seriously, she nodded her head: “Yes, besides water, there aren’t any edible things.”

Well, aside from a few steamed buns she had tossed inside from long ago, only, it was a pity that it had already become hard and ruined beyond recognition. Su Luo thought about it and still took out those two steamed buns and handed it over to Nangong Liuyun: “How about you first make do and eat a little?”

Nangong Liuyun turned his face away in disdain, arrogantly and in a pampered manner, said: “This king is a sick patient! This king wants to eat food Luo girl personally prepared with her hands!”

Su Luo suddenly felt helpless, she placed her hand between her eyebrows, as though shielding from the sun, and gazed in all four directions.

This was a desolate island.

Their current position was at a sandy beach, a few kilometers past this was an

area of continuous, unending, mountainous forest. The mountainous forest was tree-lined, appearing full of vitality. Presumably, there would be at least some bird-like creatures, right?

“I’ll go into the woods to look and see if I can find some food to bring back.” Su Luo said softly.

“This king will follow along with you.” Nangong Liuyun stood up, but was somewhat unsteady on his feet.

Su Luo, with one move, supported him: “Don’t randomly move about, your body is still weak. It’s best that you rest here.”

Nangong Liuyun rather anxiously watched her. and said wretchedly and pitifully: “At anytime, a wild animal could appear here. Can it be that you want to toss this king aside to stay here and perish on his own? Aren’t you going to protect this king?”

Su Luo was simply speechless? In the end, who was protecting whom?

“Who would dare to protect you, a seventh rank expert.” Su Luo exasperatedly rolled her eyes, turned around and was about to leave.

Nangong Liuyun faintly said to her back: “What if this king is not at seventh rank?”

His voice was very low, his mood seemed to be very gloomy and downcast.

But Su Luo heard it very clearly.

Not a seventh rank?

Su Luo immediately turned around and looked at him with deep concern, while her mouth repeated: “Not a seventh rank? What does this mean?”

Nangong Liuyun’s eyelid lowered slightly, and in a low voice, he said: “Just the literal meaning of the words, therefore, this king now needs your protection. You can’t cast aside and not take care of this king.”

Was he using an excuse to hang on to her?

Sure enough, while speaking, Nangong Liuyun also grabbed hold of the corner of her clothing. His entire person was leaning on her shoulder, giving off an

appearance of being completely dependent on her. He was moving to put his shamelessness in action.

She couldn't very well push an injured him away, right? Simply a master that was too difficult to serve!

Su Luo had no choice but to support him as they walked in the direction of the mountainous forest.

Along the way, she talked to Nangong Liuyun while carefully observing his bearing. Afterwards, she couldn't help but frown.

At this point of time, Nangong Liuyun's footsteps were weak and unstable, not to speak of a seventh rank, he couldn't even be compared to her, a third rank, okay?

This... Su Luo thought about it, finally, she still had to ask: "Last night, in the end, what really happened?"

Nangong Liuyun puffed up and gave a snort: "Finally you want to ask? This king was under the impression that you would still endure it for a long while." Not even a little curious, not even a little bit concerned about him! She was also not that least bit interested in asking him about being locked in the Joyous Conjugal Room with another woman!

This bastard had already known earlier that she was curious, and deliberately waited until she asked.

## Chapter 436 – A new lease on life (8)

---

Nangong Liuyun was causing trouble for her, forcing her to build up mental preparation for a long time. Afraid that with one short careless sentence from her, it would injure his overly sensitive heart.

Now, this bastard actually was still striking a pose over there.

Su Luo crossly glared at him: “Stop keeping me in suspense, quickly explain, quickly speak.”

The fiercer and more solemn Su Luo’s tone was when interrogating, the bigger Nangong Liuyun’s smiling expression became. With his hand behind his back, he raised an eyebrow, and said with an air of complacency: “Really want to know?”

“Of course I want to know.” Even a buddha (1) would also have a curious heart okay?

“Why do you want to know?” Nangong Liuyun said it very lightly, still carrying some of that smiling expression, and leisurely asked.

Su Luo saw that he had a calm and composed appearance. Her heart was indignant and she snorted twice: “Are you going to say it or not, in the end? So long-winded.”

Nangong Liuyun merely cast her an unhurried glance, leaning close to her ear, he teasingly said: “In fact, what you really wanted to ask is whether this king finally lost his virginity, right?”

This person, was still really...so hardcore, brazenly thick-skinned, able to shock a person to death from his endless speech.

But to put it bluntly——

Wasn’t this what she wanted to ask?

Certainly, if she was to admit it, wouldn't it be her covertly admitting that she cared about his purity? Wasn't this tantamount to her covertly admitting she had an interest in him?

As if she would let him be smug.

Su Luo turned her face away: "Why would I be concerned about this thing of yours? Why should I care if you had lost your virginity or not, what I am concerned about is, how did you find me?"

This issue was also very crucial.

After all, she was completely swept away by the wind and battered by the rain, in addition, last night's rising waves were high and rapid. Under this kind of being adrift among the waves, he unexpectedly could find her. She couldn't help but say this was miraculous.

Suddenly, Nangong Liuyun's expression darkened, although he was smiling happily just a moment ago. His hand which held hers gripped so tightly that Su Luo grimaced in pain.

Su Luo glared at him with a wrathful expression: Was this person really heavily injured? How could his strength be this great.

Nangong Liuyun leaned close to her ear, whispering like the twittering of a bird. His manner was tender, but gave a person a kind of terrible feeling: "Luo girl, the sentence you just said, this king does not like."

His heated breath lingered on her sensitive ear, Su Luo instinctively shifted to the side, but Nangong Liuyun used his strength to give a tug, pulling her into his embrace.

The tip of Su Luo's nose bumped into his chest very heavily. The bump made her nose very sore, so painful as to make the rim of her eyes all red.

Without waiting for her to cover her nose, one of Nangong Liuyun's bony fingers tipped up her pure white, tapered chin, and he bent over quickly to kiss her lips.

His kiss was overbearing and intense, possessing a franticness as he plundered and besieged her lips.

Su Luo was immediately distracted from her original thought. She only tasted the sweet scent in her mouth, a kind of limp and numbing feeling filling her whole body.

She was distracted like this for a split second, then she immediately returned to her senses. At once, instinctively, she pushed him away energetically!

She didn't expect that this time, she was able to push Nangong Liuyun away so easily.

Moreover, it wasn't limited to just pushing him away, her push made Nangong Liuyun reel about, swaying and shaking until he fell against an ancient tree at the side. With a 'bump' sound, the back of his head knocked against the trunk of the ancient tree. Momentarily, it hurt so much that he grimaced in pain.

"Hiss——" He inhaled a breath of cold air and covered his chest while he glared at Su Luo: "Damned girl, you want to kill your own husband?"

"Who told you to indiscriminately and lightly hug other people." Su Luo aggressively returned his glare with her own. However, seeing him collapse and hanging onto the tree while panting bluntly, in the end, her endurance was defeated. She moved closer to him due to having a guilty conscience and softly asked: "That is...are you alright?"

Nangong Liuyun gave two snorts and turned his head away, refusing to acknowledge her.

Could it be he wouldn't even speak to her? A feeling of remorse flashed through Su Luo's heart, her heart becoming increasingly regretful.

*1) Even a buddha: The Chinese here literally translates to Daoist/Taoist immortal, but the English meaning is more like saying 'even a saint'. So I used buddha as the equivalent to Western saints.*

## Chapter 437 – A new lease on life (9)

---

“In the end, how do you feel? Do you need to drink water?”

A kiss was just a kiss, it was not like she hadn't been kissed before, why would her reaction be so huge? Moreover, Nangong Liuyun was already wounded so heavily...

Su Luo's heart was extremely regretful.

As a result, she was even more eagerly attentive around him, staying by his side and pampering him.

Anyway, Nangong Liuyun was a typical case of giving-sunshine-and-he-would-shine type. The more Su Luo hovered around and pressed him, the more he would actually climb all over her.

He still refused to answer her.

When Su Luo was on the left side, his head would slant to the right.

Su Luo then ran to the right side, and his face again inclined to the left.

Indeed a child's bad disposition, how could it be this awkwardly difficult?

Su Luo could only reduce her anger. She pulled at his sleeves and apologized to him in a low voice: “Okay, okay, I was wrong. I should not have pushed you. Stop being angry, okay?”

Only now did Nangong Liuyun turn around to glare at her and severely remind her: “This king is injured!”

“Yes, yes, yes.” Su Luo acted well-behaved, like a waiter in a shop.

“This king is a sick patient!” Nangong Liuyun complained once more.

“I know, I know.” Su Luo parroted in haste.

From her previous world to this world, killing a person, to her, was as simple as eating a meal, but she really didn't have a lot of experience dealing with a brat. Forget it, she would just start from Nangong Liuyun, this bastard, alright.

Finished complaining, Nangong Liuyun was still rather unhappy. One could see him covering his chest, fuming and glaring at Su Luo: "Since you know, why do you still not know what to do?"

"How to do it?" Su Luo, with a signboard that said 'obedient', suspiciously shot him a glance.

Nangong Liuyun arrogantly and in a spoiled manner, lifted his chin. He cast a meaningful glance at her: "Don't you know to make it up to me?"

"How to make it up to you? Speak clearly." Couldn't he say a complete sentence? If it was not for the fact that he was wounded, she would have already walked away after an explosion.

Seeing Su Luo's somewhat impatient manner, Nangong Liuyun immediately acted like he had been wronged. That pair of peach blossom-like eyes cast a glance at Su Luo with a faint blaming expression: "Injured someone, and don't even know to kiss it as compensation..."

This appearance was simply as pitiful as a young wife who had been subjected to bullying.

My dear Highness Prince Jin...You just happen to be His Highness Prince Jin ah. Don't adopt the expression of a young wife having been bullied alright? Seeing this made her feel as though she was simply guilty of terrible crimes, don't you think?

Su Luo immediately became irascible, but...coming into contact with that pair of huge eyes that could clearly distinguish between right or wrong, and also that about-to-collapse pale face...

Su Luo. Admitted. She. Lost!

Truly defeated by him!

Su Luo moved closer towards his cheeks, sweeping past a kiss that was like a dragonfly lightly touching the water.

Afterwards, she helplessly asked: “This time it should be all right!”

Who would have thought that this bastard was still dissatisfied and this picky: “It’s not that place.”

“Looking to be spanked right?” Su Luo feigned anger to glare at him.

Su Luo at last fumbled out rules to his behavior. When dealing with a brat, she shouldn’t have given him face, so as to avoid him taking advantage of her weakness.

Nangong Liuyun, this bastard, was equivalent to a brat, so she must give him the same treatment as a brat.

Nangong Liuyun felt aggrieved as he looked at her, accusing her, and with a hand covering his chest, he refused to get up.

It was early morning, she hadn’t eaten any boiled rice for a few days, she was already starving to the point of collapse, and this bastard was still stirring up trouble. Immediately, Su Luo’s face darkened, as she reached out a hand to pull him up: “Stop whining, I know you are alright. Quickly get up so we can continue the journey.”

However, Nangong Liuyun continued to cover his chest, not even taking any notice of Su Luo.

“What else are you unsatisfied with?” Su Luo impatiently and helplessly crouched in front of him: “What’s wrong with your chest? Don’t tell me you really are wounded?”

While speaking, Su Luo reached out with her hand to lift open his embroidered robe.

“Don’t —” Nangong Liuyun pulled at her hand, stopping her, swaying and shaking as he was about to stand up.

## Chapter 438 – A new lease on life (10)

---

Him being like this, instead made Su Luo even more curious.

With one move, she pulled open Nangong Liuyun's clothing at the front of his chest. Nangong Liuyun's reaction was very big and he gave a loud shout: "Female pervert!"

However, when she saw the wound on Nangong Liuyun's chest, in a split second, Su Luo's nose soured and tears directly tumbled down.

That originally the sparkling and translucent skin that was like jade on his chest, was currently covered in sinister cuts.

The most serious wound was from a sword cut that began from the left side of his chest, and slanted towards the right abdomen. This wound was at least twenty centimeters long.

The skin and flesh on both sides turned outwards, and she could see the bloody slit in the middle. After passing through and being immersed in seawater...that cut was even more terribly sinister, seeing it made Su Luo's hair stand up.

She immediately supported him to sit down once more, reproaching and criticizing him: "Do you know how serious this wound is? Why still insist on concealing it from me!"

The rim of Su Luo's eyes were slightly red, a strong sense of being choked by sobs was in her voice.

A devilish smile appeared on Nangong Liuyun's wan face: "Finally saw Su girl sniveling, so hard to come by. Do you really not know that this king concealed it just because I want your heart to give birth to guilt?"

Already reached this point, still teasing her!

Recalling that just a moment ago, she had sent a fist which heavily smashed into his chest to push him away, suddenly, Su Luo's heart ached sorely, and she said a sentence in a low voice: "Nangong, I am sorry."

"Don't ever say 'I am sorry' to this king. This king doesn't need these three words." Nangong Liuyun tenderly caressed her face: "As long as you obediently stay by this king's side, then you will never need to say these three words."

Su Luo was crouching in a kneeling position in front of him. Hesitating for a moment, she finally still nodded her head and asked with deep concern: "How is this wound of yours? What kind of medicine does it need?"

It was a pity that even though she was an Elementary Apothecary, the time she had dealt in it was still short, so her foundation was still not firm yet.

Nangong Liuyun, with Su Luo's help, slowly stood up: "Blood-clotting pill, there should be medicinal herbs in this mountain."

Nangong Liuyun raised his head to look at the color of the sky and said to Su Luo: "First, let's look for a place to settle down, it's almost about to rain."

Su Luo raised her head and looked at the sky.

Not a cloud could be seen in the azure sky. The clear sky was bathed in a blue-green color, where did it even have the appearance of being about to rain?

However, since Nangong Liuyun said it like this, he definitely had his reasons.

Su Luo nodded her head: "Okay, we won't be leaving this uninhabited island in a short period of time. We ought to find a place to stay and settle down."

Su Luo gave Nangong a guilty glance.

He was injured this severely, and she also didn't know when he overtook her and found her on this uninhabited island. This weak, yet he still risked his life, receiving more internal injuries to rescue her from that layer of ice. Yet, she only...

Nangong Liuyun pinched her nose. His smile was devilishly charming and enchanting, with the corner of his lips raised slightly said: "Since you feel sorry for this king, then from now on, you should wait upon this king properly. You can't resist a second time, humph, humph."

Saying this, he pulled at Su Luo's slender shoulder, and nearly all his weight was transferred to and being supported by Su Luo's body. He had an appearance of being about to collapse and faint at anytime.

Really was putting his words into action.

Suddenly, Su Luo could not help but force a smile, how could she still dare to push him away?

Su Luo could only slowly move forward while half-hugging and half-supporting him.

Rather, the other person was so happy that his phoenix eyes were almost closed together, content and relaxed.

They didn't walk for long before Nangong Liuyun's footsteps paused slightly and he pointed in a direction for Su Luo. Su Luo followed along his line of sight and looked, she saw a cave hidden under a drooping Wisteria tree.

It seemed that even though he received a severe wound, Nangong Liuyun's insights were still as sharp as before.

"I'll go and take a look." Su Luo leaned Nangong Liuyun against an ancient tree and diligently instructed him with this sentence.

A smile was exposed at the corner of Nangong Liuyun's mouth.

## Chapter 439 – A new lease on life (11)

---

The cave was concealed by the Wisteria tree and thorny undergrowth. If you didn't carefully survey it, you certainly wouldn't be able to see it.

Su Luo lifted up the grassy vine and exposed a narrow cave entrance that would barely allow two people to enter side by side.

Su Luo lit a torch, holding it high, she carefully and cautiously moved forward.

At this moment, she had an unsurpassed wish and hope that the little divine dragon would wake up. She was accustomed to his existence, not having him at her side was really inconvenient.

She walked about twenty meters in the winding cave, up ahead, all of a sudden, it opened up into a wide clearing.

This rock formation was approximately twenty square meters of level ground, completely empty with nothing around. However, the atmosphere was dry without any unusual smell.

It was already pretty good that they could find a place that could block the wind and protect them from the rain. Also, Su Luo didn't have expectations that were too high, so she immediately took the opportunity to tidy up the surrounding environment once through.

Afterwards, she began to inspect the things in her space.

She remembered that she had laid out a yellow rosewood bed in her space, as well as an entire set of bedding. After a look, sure enough, it was there, and immediately, Su Luo became happy.

She took out the yellow rosewood bed and arranged it against the wall with the mattress, pillows *etc.* and everything available that was needed.

Owing to her previous world's experiences, her adaptability to new

environments was very high, so living here would not be a big deal to her. But Nangong Liuyun right now was wounded very seriously, if she was able to make him more comfortable, then Su Luo was naturally willing to do so.

She tidied it up once and saw that this place already had the flavor of a little home. Su Luo satisfiedly nodded her head then went out to look for Nangong Liuyun.

When she came out, she didn't see Nangong Liuyun, and immediately became somewhat anxious.

Yet, before she could shout out for him, Nangong Liuyun then slowly walked out from behind the tree, looking at her with a smile.

“Didn't take a rest properly and still arbitrarily walking everywhere?” Su Luo very naturally reached out her hands to help him. Nangong Liuyun immediately went into a state of collapse. Hugging her tightly, and walking with lame and staggering steps, he followed her into the cave.

Three black lines was immediately erected on top of Su Luo's forehead.

Could the change in his face be even quicker?

Su Luo supported him as they walked inside, while walking, she curiously asked him: “A moment ago, where did you go?”

Nangong Liuyun unhappily glanced at her, ultimately, he merely smiled: “Looking for medicinal herbs.”

Su Luo saw his completely empty hands and just knew he definitely did not find it.

While conversing, they finally arrived inside.

When Nangong Liuyun saw the comfortable and warm arrangement inside, immediately, he became happy, and a beaming light flashed through his eyes: “Is this meant to be entering the bridal chamber for the wedding festivities?”

“Why are you indulging in flights of fancy!” Su Luo pushed him onto the soft spongy bed while she sternly commanded: “Take off your clothes.”

Nangong Liuyun nervously grabbed the front of his clothing, like a young lady being threatened by a bandit. With some alarm, he raised his head to look at her:

“You...what are you going to do!”

He really loved to act ah, he managed to make it seem as if she was about to rape him.

Su Luo, who was forced to play the role of a bandit, had both hands at her hips, quite speechlessly, she looked to the sky: “Could your imagination still be even a little more abundant? Do you still want medicine to be applied or not?”

“Apply medicine?” Nangong Liuyun suspiciously shot a glance at Su Luo.

“Yeah.” Su Luo held out a cup of Celestial Spirit Water from her space: “It’s more accurate to say washing your wound. Sit up properly, don’t move.”

Nangong Liuyun sat by the headboard and adorably let Su Luo help him untie his belt.

Seeing the ghastly sight of his wound, Su Luo once again felt her nose going sour, and with a strong nasal sound, she said: “The wound that had been soaked by seawater is rotting. The best way is to cut away the rotting flesh, otherwise, it would be very difficult to heal.”

Nangong Liuyun raised an eyebrow and smiled, unhurriedly saying: “It would be very painful.”

“Yes.”

“However, if Luo girl agrees to one of this king’s conditions, then I may consider it.” Nangong Liuyun leisurely said.

## Chapter 440 – A new lease on life (12)

---

Su Luo suddenly felt powerless.

This man would seriously want a mile when given an inch, ah.

In the end, whose body was injured ah, and still asking for conditions left and right..

But she also couldn't speak to berate him. If she reprimanded him, he would absolutely have the ability to swiftly accuse her with his hidden bitterness.

"You say it and we'll see." Su Luo had one hand on her waist as she helplessly glanced at him.

Nangong Liuyun happily patted the carving on the large yellow rosewood bed: "Accompany this king tonight to sleep together."

Su Luo refused to acknowledge him, carrying the Celestial Spirit Water, she sat on the edge of the bed and asked: "If I don't promise?"

Nangong Liuyun very unhappily 'humph, humph': "Then this king refuses to be treated!"

"That is your body, why is it that you don't care a bit about it?" Su Luo rolled her eyes at him.

"With you being concerned, it is enough." Nangong Liuyun continued and added smoothly. .

This was putting the blame on her head? Su Luo suddenly felt at a loss for words as she cast sidelong glances at him: "Are you putting the blame on me?"

Nangong Liuyun even nodded very seriously, and with a deadly earnest tone, said: "This king is a sick person, a sick person is the most important!"

Su Luo was simply completely defeated by him.

She really wanted to take a picture of his now fuming appearance and distribute it throughout the entire nation. Thus allowing everyone to see the distinctly cold, noble and insufferably arrogant His Highness Prince Jin that was in their hearts, after all, had what kind of childish conduct in private.

Su Luo slanted a cold glance at him, “Don’t be too excessive, or else I will abandon you without a care.”

“This king’s Luo girl wouldn’t do it!” Nangong Liuyun playfully and arrogantly raised an eyebrow.

“Who said I won’t? Now, I will disappear for you to see.” Su Luo placed the Celestial Spirit Water in his hand, then turned around and walked out.

Nangong Liuyun watched Su Luo’s back as she left, momentarily, his eyes drooped with a lonely expression.....

Su Luo was not really angry with Nangong Liuyun, rather, she had recalled, that if it were scraping away the flesh to heal, she must first refine the blood-clotting pill.

The necessary herbal ingredients for the blood-clotting pill were not difficult to find. Su Luo wandered around the mountain in a circle, and in less than an hour, she had returned after finding all of them.

Su Luo also didn’t need to refine it herself, she put all those medical herbs in her space, letting her spirit enter to refine it was just fine.

As a result, the Su Luo-shaped spirit inside her space was occupied with refining the medicinal pill, while the Su Luo outside her space was also not idle, occupied with searching for food.

The herbal ingredients were not difficult to find, but, as for food, it truly stumped her.

This uninhibited island didn’t even have a single magical beast. At first, she even thought to look for a magical beast to butcher for barbecue, to make a large and sumptuous meal.

Su Luo searched around and only found a few wild fruit trees, there weren’t that many fruits on the trees, only a scarce, several tens of them.

Su Luo picked a few and tasted the berries, and she discovered that the taste could be considered not bad. Then, she picked all the berries in one breath and placed it in her space, even if it was a larger amount, she was also not worried about them not fitting.

With this kind of thinking, space was simply essential for leaving home to travel, it was something that people would kill for.

Still, only having wild fruit would be unable to appease one's hunger.

There weren't any magical beasts, but the sea must have seafood, right.

Su Luo eagerly ran to the seashore again. Her luck could also be considered excellent, on the beach, some oysters were sporadically scattered about.

An oyster was also commonly referred to as the live oyster. In the modern world, it was good stuff. With diced, fragrant garlic placed on top, then baking it on a fire, it would certainly be extremely appetizing. .

Su Luo collected all of it, filling half a small bucket with live oysters.

Nangong Liuyun was injured, so she ought to stew some fish soup to nourish him.

Su Luo was just thinking of going to capture some, but then she suddenly recalled——

Previously, the Amethyst Thorned fish she had hooked, she had practically moved a small portion of it into her own space. She had several hundreds of fishes, after a rough count..... She had actually forgotten about this.

Su Luo slapped her head, thinking that this elm tree-like head of hers had certainly been frozen silly by the ice.

Such a good treasure, unexpectedly, she hadn't thought of it before.

## Chapter 441 – A new lease on life (13)

---

Su Luo very quickly returned to the cave again.

With a glance, she saw Nangong Liuyun sitting near the headboard of the bed in a daze. The outline of his face from one side, was as fine as that of the ancient Greek gods, making people unable to look away after just a quick glance.

“What are you thinking about?” Su Luo held her hand and waved it in front of his face.

Nangong Liuyun saw that it was Su Luo, he clearly released a relieved breath of air, but immediately after, he humphed two times in a huff.

Su Luo was already familiar with his arrogant and spoiled temperament like the back of her hand, so she also did not get angry. She sat by his side with a smile, and took out the blood-clotting pill she had already refined.

“Everything is ready, now I can start to treat your injuries.”

“You are willing to come back?” Nangong Liuyun swept a glance at her, his tone was somewhat displeased, but she could hear no coldness in it.

“How could I truly walk away ah, I went looking for medicinal herbs and food for you.” Su Luo took out all kinds of stuff from inside her space like performing conjuring tricks, piling it up one after another on the ground.

Nangong Liuyun didn't even cast a glance at it, he changed his position and moved sideways to her, facing the weeds in the corner.

Su Luo didn't know whether to laugh or cry. She reached out with her hands and untied his belt again. Seeing that sinister wound gaping open outwards, Su Luo's nose soured and asked: “Does it still hurt?”

Her voice was somewhat hoarse, with a heavy nasal twang.

Nangong Liuyun cast a quick glance at her, but once again, he looked away: “You don’t care about this king anyway. Even if I die from pain, it has nothing to do with you.”

Su Luo knew that this man was acting out in a fit of being peeved.

Really an arrogant, spoiled, stingy man who likes to be jealous and peeved.

Su Luo didn’t pay any attention to him, she minded her own business of preparing well the implements needed to treat his injuries.

After she sterilized the dagger with a fireball, Su Luo took out that blood-clotting pill and handed it over to Nangong Liuyun: “Swallow it.”

Although Nangong Liuyun still ignored her, he still opened his mouth like a well-behaved child.

Looking at him, Su Luo didn’t know whether to laugh or cry, and had no alternative but to stroke his head, coaxing him with a nice tone and a very good mood: “Fine, fine, I promise you, in the future, without your permission, I will not go out alone, ok?”

She had actually known from the beginning that he was pretending to be foolish, and acted cute and peeved. However, he was only waiting for a promise from her.

So, finally, she still spoke out that sentence he loved to hear.

Nangong Liuyun nevertheless indifferently said: “This king is not forcing you, it is you who volunteered.”

Su Luo started to smile: “I know, I know, it is I who volunteered.”

Only then did Nangong Liuyun cheer up. He raised an eyebrow and looked at Su Luo: “This is more like it.”

Give him an inch, and he’ll want a mile!

Su Luo didn’t feel like reasoning with him once more, and she merely mildly said a phrase: “Lie down well, I’m about to cut it.”

The dagger glittered like frost and snow, glowing with a deep, cold radiance.

He took off his clothing, revealing that sinister wound on his chest.

Nangong Liuyun shot a quick glance at Su Luo, and frowned: “If it leaves behind a scar, you must take responsibility.”

Su Luo speechlessly nodded her head.

“You must not scorn me because you dislike it.” Nangong Liuyun thought a bit, and added another sentence.

Su Luo once again nodded with strong emphasis: “Got it, your really are long-winded.”

Su Luo was considered to be very fearless, but the person before her eyes was Nangong Liuyun. When she started to act, her hands still unavoidably trembled a little.

A single cut sliced past, fresh blood immediately came out like a violent storm.

Su Luo saw this and her nose couldn't help but sour. Her head inclined to one side to look at Nangong Liuyun.

And yet, Nangong Liuyun, at this time, didn't even let out a groan, the corner of his mouth was plastered with an unrestrained, indifferent smile. He unblinkingly watched Su Luo, that expression, that attitude, was satisfied and serious. The seriousness in his eyes were like looking at a precious treasure of a lifetime.

His silhouette was as perfect as the gods, refined like being cut from a fine blade, world-shakingly handsome, with sharp eyebrows and star-like eyes. He was extraordinarily talented and bright, with his entire person glistening and dazzling, emitting a godlike splendor, commanding people so they could not look away.

## Chapter 442 – A new lease on life (14)

---

The sharp dagger sliced through, cutting open skin and flesh. Under the circumstances of not having any anesthesia, how could it not hurt?

Su Luo clearly saw Nangong Liuyun's forehead steeped with a thin layer of perspiration, making his complexion even paler than before. He was as pale as paper, completely lacking any color.

His disheveled long hair was soaked with sweat, draped loosely over his broad shoulder.

However, the corner of his mouth was raised in a light, pure smile, appearing like the soft clouds and gentle breeze, seemingly unconcerned.

He unblinkingly gazed at her, so tenderly, so intoxicating and seemingly drowning in love.

Su Luo's gaze collided with his, her heart moved with 'thump' sounds. In a flash, she returned to her body and continued the actions of her hands.

Seeing that skin riddled with scars, a murderous aura flitted through Su Luo's eyes.

"What happened last night?" Su Luo asked for the third time.

Several times before, Nangong Liuyun had avoided it all by not responding, but now, in order to divert his attention, Su Luo mentioned it again.

Because just wait until she sprinkled the powdered blood-clotting pill on the wound, that was when it would truly hurt.

A trace of contemplation flashed across Nangong Liuyun's devilishly bewitching face. His smile was brimming with an extremely sinister expression: "You should be at ease, if this king's body is to be ruined, then it will be ruined by Luo girl's hand. How could it be given to other people?"

What kind of words were these? Making it seem as if she would use very ruthless methods to deflower him!

Su Luo irritatedly glared at him: “Then how did you escape from there?”

The traps in the Amethyst Fish Palace, how difficult was it to deal with? Since he was locked in the Joyous Conjugal Room, if he wanted to come out safely, then it was almost impossible.

Recalling the scene at that time, Nangong Liuyun’s devilishly bewitching eyes sank down slightly. His face was brimming with an extremely sinister smile: “At that time, this king was determined to preserve the purity of my body and to offer it in faith to my family’s little Luo Luo. How could I not come out?”

“How did you get wounded to this extent?”

The dagger in Su Luo’s hand swept past and another piece of rotting flesh was sliced off, Nangong Liuyun’s brows didn’t even crease. His face still had that pale smile, as he slowly said: “Merely a scuffle. Within that Joyous Conjugal Room, besides having sexual intercourse, there was also a second alternative you could choose. It was actually a straightforward transformation into humanoid.”

Gentle, warm and soft words, with a devilishly alluring smile, but the perspiration on his forehead had condensed into beads, with each of them tumbling down.

Su Luo’s nose soured and she turned her face away, pretending that she didn’t see. She increased the speed of her hand’s movements while she continued to draw him to talk: “What kind of transformation into humanoid?”

“This, um, simply put, is a fight with yourself.” Nangong Liuyun’s eyes blurred and he was feeling somewhat dizzy. Yet he was still smiling, his smile was pale and weak.

“How does one fight one’s self?” Su Luo took a glance at him and again concentrated on the task at hand.

Nangong Liuyun thought about it, saying it little by little: “Inside was very strange, it had another simulated me. This person, whether it was his spirit strength, style, and even thinking, were all at the peak state of perfection, very difficult to deal with right?”

Unexpectedly, there would be this kind of strange thing? Could still imitate a person like this? When all was said and done, was this still in ancient times or leaning towards the modern world...Su Luo was immediately depressed.

“Since it was like that, then how could you win the fight?” Su Luo paused a little, she directly pinched the blood-clotting pill into fine powder and sprinkled it on his wound that was violently gushing out fresh blood.

The wound immediately issued out ‘siss’ sizzling sounds. It had a similar effect to pouring sulfuric acid on it.

In an instant, Nangong Liuyun’s complexion went deathly white. He sucked in a deep breath of air and forcibly ignored the excruciating pain that shot through his mind. His smile was light and sluggish, but still enchanting: “Also didn’t look to see...who is this king... how....could...not win the fight....”

Fighting with the most perfect version of himself, if it was not as dangerous as risking his life, how could he have come out?

## Chapter 443 – A new lease on life (15)

---

“Then...you came out, what about the Jade Lake’s Fairy?” Su Luo couldn’t help but ask.

Nangong Liuyun was perplexed for a split second, he thought for a long time before remembering: “Oh, are you talking about her? Don’t know.”

“What? Don’t know!” Su Luo was shocked, unwaveringly staring at Nangong Liuyun, the dagger in her hand distractedly sliced by, leaving a cut on his sparkling, translucent and perfectly intact skin.

Nangong Liuyun, fuming with rage between gritted teeth, strongly and hatefully glared at her: “You want to murder your husband.”

“That’s not it...You left her in the Joyous Conjugal Room, abandoning her?” Su Luo really had a hard time imagining it.

“Then, otherwise, still need to bring her to run away on the escape route? You alone as a burden on this king is enough, anymore, and I am unable to take care of them.” Nangong Liuyun said quite bluntly.

Even though Nangong Liuyun used a disdainful tone, however, Su Luo couldn’t help but say that when she heard these words, in her heart, she was so pleased that it simply made a person burst with joy.

Still remembered back then in the Sunset Mountain Range, the Jade Lake’s Fairy and Nangong Liuyun’s figures were like a pair of immortals inseparable in love. When the Jade Lake’s Fairy left, she was disdainful of her.

Su Luo’s heart was very pleased and happy, she was unable to suppress the corner of her mouth from tilting up.

When Nangong Liuyun saw it, the corner of his mouth perked up into a simple smile, and he gave voice to a soft laugh: “That made you this happy?”

“Who’s happy?” Su Luo fiercely glared at him, even she herself didn’t know, her smile carried a trace of sweet meaning.

“Exactly, wasn’t she just a foolish young woman across from me?” Nangong Liuyun lightly laughed as he looked at her.

Su Luo peevishly rolled her eyes at him: “Oh, that’s right, you still haven’t answered. Last night, the wind was high with rapid waves, in the end, how did you find me?”

After mentioning this, Nangong Liuyun once again glared at Su Luo very fiercely, itching to pounce up and eat her.

Su Luo’s heart became scared after being glared by him, in a daze, she asked: “Did I ask something wrong...?”

Seeing Nangong Liuyun grinding his teeth, didn’t know why, Su Luo’s conscience felt extremely guilty. Obviously, she hadn’t done anything wrong...

“Don’t feel like saying!” Nangong Liuyun sent a ruthless glare at her, closed his eyes and nodded off to sleep.

Fine, since you don’t feel like saying it, then don’t say it.

Su Luo concentrated on the final process of treating him.

The last blood-clotting pill was sprinkled on his wound.

The blood-clotting pill could be taken orally and applied externally to do its job.

This was the most intense medicinal pill, it was more than ten times as painful as before.

Nangong Liuyun took deep breaths continuously, his lanky body was motionless. If you didn’t look carefully, you wouldn’t find any indication of the pain he was in.

“Does it hurt?” Su Luo asked, her heart aching.

“No.” Nangong Liuyun slowly sucked in a breath, faintly sighed and released a breath of air, “Used to it.”

Suddenly, Su Luo felt her nose souring, the rim of her eyes turning slightly red. She turned her face away.

One phrase of 'used to it', how many years of painful suffering had he gone through? She knew he was talking about the pain in his body, that would act up once every month.

Suddenly— —

A trace of shock flashed through Su Luo's mind.

Every month, Nangong Liuyun's illness would flare up and ache for one night, calculating the time...

Su Luo glanced back, looking at Nangong Liuyun with a startled expression. The tears in her eyes almost tumbled out, her voice carrying a trace of being choked with emotions: "Last night, your...illness flared up?"

Yes, that's right, she didn't remember it wrongly. It was precisely the fifteenth of every month that his illness would flare up!

When he heard this being said, Nangong Liuyun was almost gnashing his teeth in fury. He glared very fiercely towards Su Luo: "You are still aware of it!"

Su Luo's heart become even weaker...

Nangong Liuyun took a few deep breaths, finally glaring at Su Luo severely. Slowly stressing each word, he grinded his teeth before finally biting out: "Last night, this king, in order to chase after you, simply...called you and still received no answer!"

# Chapter 444 – Softly fragrant and romantic

## (1)

---

She could imagine that last night, he had already received such heavy internal injuries and external trauma, in addition to his illness flaring up, on top of that. Also, running into a storm surge on the ocean...so out of luck, how did he run into all these misfortunes?

As for her? What was she doing at that time?

Once Su Luo thought about this, she simply wanted to cover her face.

Last night, under such conditions of high wind and rapid waves, she...actually fell asleep.

She could imagine him with great difficulty dragging his ill body that was seriously injured to chase after her. He was risking his life, sliding through the ocean, following after the direction she went spinning towards non-stop. While she was contentedly sound asleep, having a good dream...

Thinking of this, Su Luo was feeling so guilty that she nearly kneeled down in front of him.

Nangong Liuyun raised an eyebrow, cast a quick sidelong glance at Su Luo, and the corner of his lips rose slightly: "Now you are aware of your mistake?"

Su Luo kept silent but nodded her head with all her might.

Nangong Liuyun beckoned her with his hand: "Come here."

Su Luo eagerly, with jolting buttocks, ran over. She cleverly sat in front of him, silently watching him.

That was a cleverly cute, meek appearance that Nangong Liuyun had never seen on her body.

Nangong Liuyun reached out his hand to rub her head: “Do you know what to do now?”

“Eh?” Su Luo expressed that she didn’t understand?

Nangong Liuyun slanted her a glance. He sought a comfortable position to lean against on the bed and looked at Su Luo nonchalantly: “Now, this king is hungry.”

Su Luo’s gaze landed on his chest wound.

After sprinkling blood-clotting pill on top, the blood flow on the wound had already stopped. Moreover, it had the faint signs of healing.

Su Luo washed a fruit and handed it over to Nangong Liuyun.

Unexpectedly, he was still very picky and shook his head: “This king doesn’t eat such random stuff.”

They were stranded on this uninhabited island and he was still this picky. Su Luo speechlessly cast him a glance: “Besides these fruits, there are only oysters and Amethyst Thorned fishes.”

Nangong Liuyun very extravagantly spoke a sentence: “Just the Amethyst Thorned fish then.”

One Amethyst Thorned fish was equivalent to one green-colored crystal stone. Fetching the fish to roast, then, you basically couldn’t absorb its spirit essence.

But Su Luo now lacked other stuff, and Amethyst Thorned fish was something she had plenty of. Once she heard Nangong Liuyun say this, she promised without raising any objections.

As far as barbecuing was concerned, Su Luo was so familiar with it that she could do it with one hand tied behind her back. In a short while, she had roasted two golden-colored Amethyst Thorned fishes, so fragrant that it assailed the nostrils.

Su Luo’s barbecuing skills was extremely good, both sides of the fish were golden and not burned, it was flaky and crispy at the same time. Just smelling it would make the person eating emotionally moved.

Su Luo handed the larger one to Nangong Liuyun: “Ready to eat, take it.”

Nangong Liuyun glanced once at her, with an aggrieved expression, he said: “You aren’t showing a bit of sincerity. In any case, shouldn’t you be feeding it to this king?”

“What?” Su Luo was extremely hungry herself, she had snatched up the roasted fish and was stuffing it in her mouth, and with obstructed speech, she asked.

Heavens knows it had already been two days since she had a grain of rice. She was so famished that her bones were sticking out.

“This king is a sick person!” Nangong Liuyun acted somewhat shamelessly.

Su Luo exasperatedly rolled her eyes at him: “Nothing wrong with your hands.”

“However, this king is a sick person! So sick I’m about to die!” Nangong Liuyun angrily glared at her.

An unreasonable male was simply incredibly childish.

Afraid that him getting angry would affect the wound, Su Luo could only raise both hands in surrender: “Okay, okay, okay, feed you, then just feed you, like a disabled person.”

Nangong Liuyun obviously was still somewhat displeased and turned his face away, not looking at Su Luo.

Su Luo didn’t know whether to laugh or cry, and said: “Didn’t I say I will feed you? Why are you still mad?”

“No sincerity.” Nangong Liuyun mumbled a phrase in complaint.

“How could I not have sincerity?” Su Luo sat properly at his side, with the other hand turning his face that was panting with rage back: “Ahhh, open your mouth——”

# Chapter 445 – Softly fragrant and romantic

## (2)

---

Nangong Liuyun glanced at her faintly, leisurely saying: “Still saying you are sincere, before feeding me, you don’t even know to test to see if the temperature is too high, whether it can burn this king or not.”

Su Luo was finally convincingly defeated by this picky male.

They had been reduced to these kind of circumstances, and he still insisted on living like a lord of the manor.

Seeing his pair of monochrome eyes innocently staring at her, Su Luo simply lacked the tears to cry. Just a moment ago, she had clearly already eaten a fish, could she still not have known whether it burned her hand or not?

He was simply nitpicking.

In order to placate this difficult, big boy child, Su Luo could only hold the Amethyst Thorned fish and take a bite out of it. Afterwards, she said to Nangong Liuyun: “It’s fine, the temperature is neither too hot nor too cold. It’s perfect, quickly eat it.”

Nangong Liuyun comfortably leaned against the soft cushions, his gaze was picky, his finger pointed at the place Su Luo took a bite, very seriously saying: “This king wants to eat from that place.”

That straight-faced expression he gave, made Su Luo stumped for words.

Could it be that the meat on the back of the fish was especially tasty? She wasn’t too picky and just randomly took a bite.

She lifted her eyes and saw Nangong Liuyun’s slightly narrowed phoenix eyes, with the corner of his lips tilted a touch, and Su Luo suddenly comprehended.

“You, this—” She simply was speechless, as it turned out, the mystery actually lay in there.

Nangong Liuyun calmly said a sentence: “Didn’t you say you feel guilty? Where is the guilt? Still haven’t fed me any fish.”

Fine, Su Luo suffered a defeat.

Last night, she really shouldn’t have.

Su Luo sucked in a deep breath. Smoothing out her breathing, she picked up the chopsticks, scraping the fish meat from the bones, and little by little, fed it to him.

Nangong Liuyun now appeared to be an obedient child, clumsy, foolish. Where did he even have a little of that cruel, bloodthirsty manner? Cute and lovable, just like a little kid that was being fed food in kindergarten.

With great difficulty, she finished feeding him the fish. Su Luo felt it was more challenging than running several hundred kilometers.

Who would have imagined that Nangong Liuyun, this bastard, would actually still not stop.

He bossily said to Su Luo: “This king wants to bathe!”

Su Luo suddenly had an urge to swat him to death.

“Now, what kind of situation are you in? Still want to take a bath?” It was such a serious wound that she had just finished operating on, and it still hadn’t formed a scab yet. In spite of everything, he still wanted to bathe!

Really like a child, being deliberately provocative.

Nangong Liuyun however, was very obstinate. Shaking his head, he only blindly insisted: “This king’s body stinks to death, want to bathe!”

“Can you wait until the wound gets a little better before bathing, okay?” Right now, Su Luo seemed to be in the middle of coaxing a child throwing a tantrum. She was gentle and soft but also seemed helpless.

“Not good, want it right now.” This exceedingly obstinate, bratty kid who wouldn’t do what he was told.

Su Luo nearly clenched her teeth, with both hands placed at her hips: “Nangong Liuyun, don’t be so childish okay! You are not a three-year-old child! You should know what to do that’s best for you.”

Nangong Liuyun, with an expression of having been wronged, turned his face away, refusing to acknowledge Su Luo.

That fuming appearance, clearly, he was being petulant.

Su Luo held her forehead.

God ah, who will come to tell her, the respected, powerful, insufferably arrogant His Highness Prince Jin, how could he have become so childish to this unreasonable extent?

Nangong Liuyun’s back was to her, his eyes looked at the vegetation at the corner, not saying a word.

Su Luo stood unmoving at his back, as she somewhat helplessly watched him.

The surroundings were very quiet, so still that you could hear the wind blowing through the leaves.

All of a sudden, Nangong Liuyun tossed aside the embroidered quilt, his lanky body standing up. He got off the bed, turned his head around and just walked out.

Su Luo was immediately anxious, grabbing onto his hand that brushed by to stop him, she was flustered and exasperatedly said: “You still haven’t recovered completely from your injuries, how could you get off the bed? Where do you want to go right now?”

Nangong Liuyun glanced back to look at her, with half of his eyes hooded, unhurriedly said: “To bathe.”

# Chapter 446 – Softly fragrant and romantic

## (3)

---

Su Luo was immediately speechless.

Already wounded to this degree, and still this in love with being clean?

Seeing him determined to be this way, obstinate like a little old man, in the end, Su Luo was unable to dissuade him, so she compromised: “Okay, okay, sit here, this young lady will wait upon you.”

At an angle, Su Luo couldn't see the corner of Nangong Liuyun's mouth lifting slightly into a smiling expression of having gotten his way.

Nangong Liuyun leisurely reclined on the mattress of the bed, watching Su Luo busily rushing about because of him. She was running back and forth, this gave rise to the full satisfaction and bliss in his eyes.

Su Luo had an entirely different mood from his.

This deserted mountain on an isolated island with nothing, and he as a great young master of the house, still had so many demands. If it were not for considering that he had received a serious wound, she would not felt like dealing with him.

Su Luo gave a heavy sigh, stooped down to fetch a bucket of fresh water to return, and also added a portion of Celestial Spirit Water inside.

If others were to know that Su Luo was this extravagant, very likely, they would have gone insane.

Celestial Spirit Water, at that time, such a small bottle, and Su Manor had considered it to be an extremely precious treasure that was guarded seriously at the residence.

But now, Su Luo had picked up half a bucket of Celestial Spirit Water, poured it into a huge circular tub, and then stirred it carefully to get it evenly distributed.

Subsequently, Su Luo again used her fire attribute's capability to directly heat up this tub of water to the appropriate temperature. She felt it was more or less ready, then Su Luo recalled that she hadn't brought soap.

She couldn't help but look to the sky and sigh.

She vowed to wait until she returned to the empire, there she would equip all the necessary goods for everyday living in order to prepare for use in times of need. Otherwise, an empty space was only suited as a decorative item, and not cleverly used as a great secret tool for leaving home to travel.

Nangong Liuyun noiselessly appeared, and passed to Su Luo a handful of grass: "Take this."

"This is?"

"Aromatic Soap Grass." Nangong Liuyun gave a cough and said: "It's much easier to use compared to regular soap. It also has a sweet scent."

Su Luo received the grass in a daze, suddenly, she returned to her senses.

Ever since they entered the cave, she had helped him heal by cutting off the rotted flesh, when did he still have the time to leave the cave? Then in the end, from where did he bring out this handful of Aromatic Soap Grass?

Suddenly, Su Luo recollected that when she first entered the cave to find a path, she didn't see him, could it be at that time...Su Luo's complexion darkened slightly and unenthusiastically cast him a glance.

"So it turns out you had already been prepared since earlier." Su Luo crossed both hands over her chest, her gaze landing on his body was as light as a feather.

Nangong Liuyun gave a slight cough and turned his face away, but his tone was still tough: "This king was soaked in seawater for an entire night, unlike someone who had a layer of ice as protection!"

This bastard certainly said it on purpose! Deliberately mentioning that matter to give birth to guilt in her heart.

Su Luo admitted it, every time she remembered this matter, she would be

extremely remorseful about last night's event.

“Okay, wasn't blaming you.” Su Luo snorted twice.

“Also not considering why this king's wound was so serious.” Nangong Liuyun grumbled some more, with a complaining tone, he said: “At that time, if this king had complied, how could I end up like this right now?”

Immediately, Su Luo's entire face blackened. What was this bastard doing? Complaining that he didn't comply with the Jade Lake's Fairy in the Joyous Conjugal Room?

Nangong Liuyun cast a glance at Su Luo and again muttered with a faint blaming tone: “Also not examining, if it was not because of chasing after someone, how could more injuries be added to this king's wounds. To the point that this king can't even bathe himself?”

This was taking all his injuries and completely unjustly placing them on top of her head? Su Luo choked on a breathe of air, but couldn't send it out in anger after all.

“Fine, fine, fine, it was all my fault, I will take responsibility till the end.” If he was to continue speaking, even living in this cave would also be her fault.

Only now did Nangong Liuyun arrogantly raise his chin, with both hands behind his back, and he leisurely said: “Of course it is.”

Su Luo did not feel like taking notice of this rogue, and pulled him to sit on the stool.

# Chapter 447 – Softly fragrant and romantic

## (4)

---

Mainly because of the so-called ‘unfamiliar at first, but well-accustomed to it soon enough’.

Now, peeling off Nangong Liuyun’s clothing was simply so familiar to Su Luo that she could do it blindfolded. Wherefore did she still have the nervousness of the first time when even her fingers trembled?

So to say, how formidable a kind of thing was a habit?

Nangong Liuyun cleverly sat on the stool, allowing Su Luo’s agile movements to peel him naked.

Seeing Su Luo’s such efficient movements, Nangong Liuyun actually smiled and cast a gaze that made fun of her: “Oh! This time, what is going on? You are not blushing?”

Just one glance at that infuriating smile on his face, and Su Luo immediately recalled when she entered Prince Jin’s Royal Manor. This bastard purposefully caught her and forced her to wait upon him as a servant boy. That time, he still calmly pretended he didn’t recognize her, truly shameless.

On that day, she was made to act like a servant boy, now she was a maid...Why was it that her position in front of him didn’t ever seem to go up?

“Who’s blushing, you big-headed demon, what piece of flesh on your body have I not seen?” Su Luo very proudly raised an eyebrow.

Nangong Liuyun swiftly continued adding a sentence with the expression of proper righteousness: “It is you yourself who admitted that this king’s entire naked body has been seen by you. You must take responsibility!”

Su Luo's entire face was black, as she stared coldly at him: "It's you who insisted on taking a bath."

"But the clothing was all stripped off by you, you don't want to take responsibility?" Nangong Liuyun's expression was deadly serious, every sentence pressed in on her.

Su Luo held her forehead.

At the same time, her heart couldn't help but think that this bastard simply making a big deal of wanting to bathe, it shouldn't be because he wanted her to see him naked, so that afterwards, he could force her to take responsibility?

If it was other people, Su Luo naturally would not believe it, but if it was Nangong Liuyun...this bastard's brain lobe had different grooves from ordinary people, there were only things he couldn't think off, never things he wouldn't do.

Nangong Liuyun saw Su Luo not saying a word, and once again, he gave two snorts: "This king remained chaste because of you, now having been seen completely naked by you, in any case, in this lifetime, it must be you. You figure it out and do it accordingly."

This rogue, really going so far as to place the blame on her.

Su Luo slanted him a glance: the majestic, stately His Highness Prince Jin, a person high above with ten thousand people beneath him, why on earth would he insist on her taking responsibility? It was not like there were no other women.

"I know, try to be together for three months, if it doesn't work, we break up and go our separate ways." Su Luo said in a smiling, sing-song tone.

When Nangong Liuyun heard the last half of the sentence, his expression blackened, however very quickly, it returned to normal. He unhurriedly watched her with a serene expression, but his eyes held deep provocation: "You dare."

Su Luo didn't feel like continuing to bicker with him and immediately changed the subject: "What's the matter with your martial arts? When will it be restored?"

"You are actually concerned about this king." Nangong Liuyun slanted her a

faint glance.

“Naturally that’s because I am concerned about myself.” Su Luo said disgruntledly. “Now that we have landed on this uninhabited island, don’t know when we can return. We can only wait until your wounds heals, then we can consider the matter of returning.”

Nangong Liuyun’s expression seemed to have a touch of displeasure: “Just this unwilling to continue living on this uninhabited island with this king?”

Su Luo knew he had misunderstood and she merely smiled as she explained it to him: “Has anyone ever told you that you are narrow-minded?”

“Who dares?” Nangong Liuyun said, full of a domineering attitude.

He was simply a tyrant, those who followed along with him lived, those who opposed him perished.

Su Luo helplessly shook her head and explained it to him: “It’s not that I don’t want to live here, it’s only because before, the life and death duel with Su Qing had already been agreed upon. This matter is less than one month away, you tell me, what’s to be done?”

If they were stranded on this uninhabited island, when the time came, she wouldn’t even have the chance to enter the stage. Wouldn’t it then be a defeat without a fight?

This was not the style Su Luo was accustomed to.

Nangong Liuyun’s expression eased somewhat in a split second. Muttering to himself, he half-promised and then gave Su Luo a more precise time: “Seven days.”

# Chapter 448 – Softly fragrant and romantic

## (5)

---

The seven days Nangong Liuyun said, starting from the first day, there was constant catastrophe.

It was not the type of natural disaster like being blown by wind and rained upon, rather, it was what would be considered a catastrophe.

Just barely managed to make Nangong Liuyun clean, Su Luo mopped up the wet patches on the ground. Su Luo got the person in the tub out and picked up the rest to toss it outside.

Unexpectedly, pouring out the water from the tub actually attracted a person over.

Seeing that malevolent and frightening face in front of her, Su Luo detected a sense of familiarity.

This face was densely covered in scars, full of pot-holes, and one of the eyes had been blown away; he was horrible to look at.

The other party's sole remaining eye seemed to be tempered with venom, as it unwaveringly stared at Su Luo and was unblinkingly fixed on her.

Stunned, nicely surprised, hatred, bitter resentment...All these came together within that single eyes suffused with dark green radiance.

“Li...Aotian?” It took Su Luo a long time to recognize him.

This ugly person was actually Li Aotian? It was simply too unfathomable.

She remembering the Li Aotian from a few days ago, who was covered from head to toe in a dark green embroidered robe. His appearance was clearly smart with handsome facial features. Although he fell just short of Nangong Liuyun's

looks, his appearance was still extremely outstanding.

But the him right now was so ugly as to frighten even the deity of ghosts to tears. If you glued him to the door, his looks could ward off evil spirits. If you hung him on the headboard of a bed, he could act as a type of contraception.

Li Aotian stared fixedly at Su Luo, fuming with rage between gritted teeth: “Loathsome girl! The heavens didn’t want me to die! I finally found you!”

Li Aotian’s hands were like the claws of an eagle, fast as electricity it reached for Su Luo’s shoulder!

From an extremely handsome appearance to an utterly, unbearably ugly one. All of his loss was conferred on him by the loathsome girl in front of him!

The hatred of being disfigured was like the enmity of having one’s father killed, absolutely irreconcilable. If he didn’t kill this loathsome girl today, how could he, Li Aotian, still have the face to live on this earth?

Li Aotian’s style of action was like a storm, with speed fast as lightning. There wasn’t enough time for Su Luo to dodge, she slipped on the spot, and was thus able to avoid this grab of his.

At the same time, Su Luo’s heart was very shocked!

In the end, what was going on? Li Aotian wasn’t blown dead by the spirit ball, then fine, but his martial arts cultivation had actually advanced! Moreover, it didn’t just advance a little bit!

Just when Li Aotian was about to attack Su Luo once more in rage, the light shadow of a person noiselessly appeared at the cave entrance: “Stay your hand.”

“Nangong Liuyun?” Li Aotian’s hand immediately stopped in the blink of an eye, as he stared in astonishment at Nangong Liuyun.

His mind momentarily could not return to his senses.

Wasn’t he locked in the Joyous Conjugal Room with Yaoyao? How could he have appeared here by himself? Could it be that Yaoyao was also here?

Nangong Liuyun placed his hands behind his back as he stood up, his body appeared straight and tall, as well as relaxed. His expression was unkindly cool and indifferent, with his icy eyes coldly sweeping a glance at Li Aotian: “What are

you doing?”

Having been swept by his meaningful gaze, Li Aotian instinctively cowered.

Before, for many years, Li Aotian had always lived underneath Nangong Liuyun’s prestige, so he had an instinctive reverence and deferment towards Nangong Liuyun.

Therefore, Nangong Liuyun didn’t have to take action. Him merely standing there indifferently was able to make Li Aotian’s heart grow cautious, afraid he would not be able to stop his killing move.

“How is it that you are here? What about Yaoyao? What did you do to her?” Li Aotian’s gaze was cold and strict, as he shouted with deep worry and hatred.

“What did this king do to her?” Nangong Liuyun calmly stood with his hands behind his back, smiling faintly with a raised eyebrow as he cast a sidelong glance at Li Aotian, “Why don’t you ask, what she did to this king?”

Suddenly, Li Aotian’s chest become obstructed, an unnatural expression flashing through his eyes.

He had already known earlier about the matter of the Joyous Conjugal Room, and had also advised against it. A man was not like a woman, even if a relationship had taken place, it would also be unable to tie him down. However, Yaoyao had insisted on using this method to force him to marry her, as her older brother, what could he have done?

## Chapter 449 – Meeting one's foe (1)

---

“In the end, where did you hide Yaoyao?” Li Aotian, in a flustered manner and discomfitingly, yelled loudly towards Nangong Liuyun.

The latter merely arrogantly stood there with his hands behind his back, unhurriedly cast him a glance and once again turned his face away.

In the end, Li Aotian suddenly got angry.

But Nangong Liuyun had accumulated prestige for a long time, the many years of prestige wasn't something he wanted to ignore and could just ignore.

Li Aotian glared at him furiously, lifted his foot and immediately rushed inside. He searched everywhere once inside, but there wasn't a trace of Li Yaoyao.

“Nangong Liuyun! Where's Yaoyao!” That was the younger sister he doted on the most, he absolutely wouldn't allow her to meet with a mishap!

Nangong Liuyun cast him an indifferent glance: “You ask this king, who will this king ask?”

“Wasn't Yaoyao locked in the Joyous Conjugal Room together with you? How can you not know?” Li Aotian shouted at Nangong Liuyun in chagrin.

Nangong Liuyun however, calmly said: “This king indeed was locked in there, she may not necessarily be.”

Li Aotian's heart was startled.

Worthy of being Nangong Liuyun, to actually see what's wrong so quickly.

“No matter what, you must hand over Yaoyao!” Li Aotian furiously said.

“Li Aotian, your courage got a lot fatter.” Nangong Liuyun calmly said, while standing with his hands behind his back. His phoenix eyes narrowed, as he gave a smile that was not quite one towards Li Aotian.

His gaze was as light as a feather, with a tone that was soft as a dandelion dancing in the breeze. So soft and relaxed, but full of a murderous aura.

Li Aotian immediately stared blankly as an alarmed color then appeared in his eyes.

From very young, he had known Nangong Liuyun. He had unsurpassed talent, then fine, but it so happened that his willpower was even more astonishing. Therefore, his strength had always far surpassed everyone else.

Frankly, Li Aotian had really been beaten into fearing Nangong Liuyun, therefore, whenever he faced Nangong Liuyun, Li Aotian would inevitably lack some confidence.

Now, Su Luo stood by Nangong Liuyun's side, silently cursing unceasingly in her heart.

Nangong Liuyun could really act.

Obviously, at this time, he was so weak that he nearly lost consciousness, but only relying on a few sentences, he was able to deter Li Aotian.

Nangong Liuyun once again coldly smiled: "If you insist on finding Li Yaoyao, then return to your Li Manor, you won't find her here."

Having heard what was said, Li Aotian immediately let go of his worry.

Even though Nangong Liuyun didn't explicitly say it, but his meaning was very obvious, Yaoyao was safe.

Li Aotian released a breath in relief, only now did he coldly look towards Su Luo: "Loathsome girl! Give me your life!"

Li Aotian gave a loud shout and was just about to rush towards Su Luo.

But Nangong Liuyun merely lifted his foot to stand in front of Su Luo.

If it was an ordinary person, assuredly, he would cry to the sky, rush to the ground and beg for forgiveness. But our His Highness Prince Jin took the opposite path to walk on.

One could only see him coldly stare fixedly at Li Aotian: "You want to die, then this king will help you accomplish this. But don't blame this king for not

remembering the two families' friendship.”

“Nangong Liuyun, don't you interfere in these muddled waters!” Li Aotian aggressively yelled towards him.

Nangong Liuyun shot him an indifferent glance, and arrogantly raised an eyebrow: “This king's princess, if this king doesn't protect her, then who am I to protect?”

“You—” Li Aotian was furious and anxious at the same time. He speechlessly glared at Nangong Liuyun and then very fiercely said: “Nangong Liuyun, this time, are you determined to interfere?”

Even though Nangong Liuyun and Yaoyao's matter was empty with no fixed time set in the future, but as Li Yaoyao's older brother, he didn't want to be in a deadlock with Nangong Liuyun. He didn't want to make an enemy of such an expert.

If he was to act, then Li Aotian would only lose.

Li Aotian very fiercely glared once at Su Luo: “Fine,, this time, taking Nangong Liuyun into consideration, then I'll let you live an extra day!”

Leaving this sentence behind, Li Aotian, in a flash, became a white line and then a black dot, immediately fading away in the air.

## Chapter 450 – Meeting one's foe (2)

---

Nangong Liuyun's pair of burning eyes stared fixedly at Li Aotian's body, before his body weakly swayed a little.

Su Luo immediately went up to support him, and impatiently asked: "How are you? Still okay?"

Just now, in order to scare Li Aotian away, Nangong Liuyun had continuously hardened his body to appear as if he was never injured.

But Su Luo who stood by his side could clearly see, that under that cold and solemn expression, what kind of pain there was .

Nangong Liuyun faintly said a sentence: "Still able to hold up, let's go in and talk."

Su Luo nodded her head. It couldn't be said for sure if Li Aotian was hidden in the surroundings.

She supported Nangong Liuyun to slowly enter the cave.

For a moment, neither spoke, the atmosphere around them was somewhat heavy.

Only after a long time did Su Luo force a smile to say: "How was it that Li Aotian was not blown dead by the spirit pinball?"

Nangong Liuyun had a forced smile as he looked at her, reaching out to rub her head.

"Forgot to tell you, when using the spirit pinball, actually, there is a little problem with the aftermath. For instance, there is a one in ten thousand possibility that it will allow the opponent to absorb the spirit force in the spirit pinball."

Nangong Liuyun spread out his hands, and helplessly said: “That one in ten thousand chance was actually encountered by him.”

“Then, it can be said that Li Aotian had absorbed the spirit power in the spirit pinball?”

“It should be so. His strength is a little better than before, now, he should be seventh rank.” Nangong Liuyun said with a bitter smile.

“Seventh rank?” Su Luo could only feel the space between her eyebrows twitch.

What kind of evil had she attracted?

Before, she had wanted to take advantage of the situation to kill Li Aotian, but who would have thought that she would actually send him off into the clear sky, allowing him to break straight through the sixth rank barrier to reach the seventh rank in a whirlwind.

Now, on this uninhabited island, her own strength was lacking, and Nangong Liuyun was seriously wounded. At this point of time, it was quite obvious that Li Aotian’s martial arts was currently the most formidable.

He was not a fool. Before, Nangong Liuyun was able to scare him away, but it was hard to say whether he wouldn’t think about it and realize the truth before coming again.

Su Luo, somewhat depressed, patted her head.

The first time she used a spirit pinball, and she smashed it at a person who then absorbed the spirit power. Should it be said that her luck was extremely good or her luck was super, unequivocally bad?

“Should we still live here?” If they were to still live here as before, then it was tantamount to waiting for Li Aotian to think it through and to afterwards bring the fight to their doorway.

“If we leave here immediately, even if his head was stupid, then he would understand.” Nangong Liuyun smiled a little like the light wind and the soft earth, “Now, we can only gamble, betting that he wouldn’t realize within seven days.”

Difficult...Su Luo rested her chin on both hands and slowly shook her head.

Three days in a row passed dully without a ripple.

Finally, the fourth day.

Su Luo quietly secured Nangong Liuyun to sit down cross-legged, with both eyes closed tightly, he was immersed in restoration state. A dignified expression flashed through his eyes.

The exterior wounds on Nangong Liuyun's body had already more or less healed completely. His internal injuries were also being methodically restored.

These last few days were the most critical time, if he was disturbed by anyone, the consequences would be too horrible to contemplate.

Li Aotian's figure appeared in Su Luo's mind.

Since he appeared a few days ago, afterwards, this person seemed to have completely disappeared.

Normally, it could be said that Su Luo should be happy, however in her heart, there was a faint. not-so-good premonition.

Her premonition had always been accurate.

Or perhaps, it could be said that her perception for danger was much stronger than the overwhelming majority of people.

Just when Su Luo was a touch concerned, the heavy sound of footsteps could be heard coming from outside.

Li Aotian!

The hands at Su Luo's side clenched tightly, a worried expression flashed across her face as her gaze landed on Nangong Liuyun's body.

At this moment, there was a faint mist hovering over his body, he was wholeheartedly immersed in cultivation and was totally unaware of the disturbance in the outside world.

## Chapter 451 – Meeting one's foe (3)

---

If Nangong Liuyun's cultivation was interrupted, it was very possible his foundation would be injured, and in the future, it would be very difficult for him to improve further. She would never allow Nangong Liuyun to suffer this kind of injury.

Su Luo thought up to here and then, without the slightest hesitation, turned around and walked out. She must draw Li Aotian away from here.

Nangong Liuyun, this time, it will switch to me protecting you.

Su Luo took large strides to walk out.

As expected, she saw Li Aotian, with an overbearing manner, travelling towards here.

Su Luo saw him and her face deliberately appeared surprised. At this moment, the place where she stood just so happened to lead outside.

The side where you enter the cave, Li Aotian just so happened to be keeping watch with an ice-cold expression.

Truth to be told, in the beginning, he really was scared away by Nangong Liuyun. But during these few days, the more he thought about it, the more he felt something was wrong.

This was obviously an isolated island with deserted mountains, there was not a trace of humans having lived here that could be found. However, in that cave, a yellow rosewood bed, bedding and pillows were actually all there!

What did this prove?!

It was very difficult for Li Aotian to accept it, but he had no choice but to believe, that between Nangong Liuyun and Su Luo, one of them certainly was a space mage.

A space mage ah, what kind of rare and precious elemental system was that?

After a space mage had matured, not only did they have dominance in attack and speed compared to other elements, they could also make space rings.

This made Li Aotian drool.

Of course, he wasn't totally blinded by the benefit in front of his eyes. At that time in the cave, besides this, he had also sniffed out the faint smell of blood.

Therefore, he had some suspicion regarding whether or not Nangong Liuyun was wounded.

If it was really like that...since he absolutely insisted on wanting that loathsome girl and also wanting to abandon the cooperation with the Li family, then just go to hell!

A frenetic and sinister expression flashed through Li Aotian's eyes.

At this moment.

Li Aotian's sinister and cold gaze stared fixedly at Su Luo, the corner of his mouth hooked into a severe, bloodthirsty and grim smile: "Loathsome girl, prepare to die at ease! I want to see who can still save you this time!"

Su Luo had a terrified expression as she looked at him while retreating backwards step by step: "Li Aotian! Don't forget who made you directly advance a level!"

Mentioning this, Li Aotian had a bellyful of anger, he'd rather return to his original appearance than to advance and change into his current ghastly appearance.

"Loathsome girl! Accept death!" Li Aotian slapped towards Su Luo's back.

Su Luo was already prepared from earlier and directly rolled to the side. At the same time, she loudly berated Li Aotian: "Li Aotian! You are courting death! Wait until Nangong Liuyun comes back from searching for food, he definitely won't let you get away with this!"

Li Aotian originally wanted to create some activity to get some news, drawing Nangong Liuyun to make a move.

This time, he certainly would not fear Nangong Liuyun again. If he had the chance, it was best if he directly killed him!

If His Highness Prince Jin didn't exist on this earth, then it would have a place for him, Li Aotian.

He didn't expect that Nangong Liuyun had left to look for food, it was really a pity! But able to kill this loathsome girl, it could also be considered avenging himself and Yaoyao!

Li Aotian thought up to this point, his strikes became even more ferocious.

Su Luo took out a bronze plaque from her space and tossed it towards Li Aotian: "Look at my spirit pinball!"

Li Aotian was very seriously haunted by the shadow of the spirit pinball. He didn't even think before covering his head with his hands and rolling far away, tumbling into a muddy ditch.

However, Su Luo took this chance to turn around and run.

If she didn't run now, then when would she wait until? Where would she still be able to find another spirit pinball?

That bronze plaque was exactly the one that the Liu family's grandfather had personally delivered to the door.

The spirit dance steps in this bronze plaque was actually badly damaged. Inside it was merely the most basic spirit dance steps, and Su Luo had already mastered it all.

She didn't expect that this bronze plaque could be used on a useless person to help her once again.

## Chapter 452 – Meeting one's foe (4)

---

Su Luo was really very thankful to Liu family's grandfather for presenting her with the bronze plaque. But if the grandfather was to know, very likely, he would crawl up from the bed and spit out a few mouthfuls of blood.

Li Aotian covered his head and rolled into the muddy ditch, only after a long time did he discover that the so-called spirit pinball basically didn't explode. Then, he lifted his eyes to look and discovered it was actually a blackish, worn out, rusted copper!

Li Aotian didn't even need to think, immediately, his feet descended and stomped this bronze plaque into broken pieces.

His anger was completely sucked in by Su Luo, wherefore would he still have the mind to check whether Nangong Liuyun was wounded or not. He also basically never imagined that now was the best opportunity to kill Nangong Liuyun.

It was a pity that Su Luo had provoked him into such a fury that it made him directly miss this opportunity.

"Loathsome girl! If I don't kill you today! Then my last name is not Li!" Now, with his entire body covered in mud, Li Aotian was so furious that his whole body was shaking. His single eye was scarlet red, making the repulsive countenance on his face even more prominent and malevolent.

As for Su Luo, seeing Li Aotian fall into her scheme by covering his head then rolling into the bog, she naturally would not miss this golden opportunity.

One could see her simultaneously enter the jungle on the deserted mountain and continuously rush madly away by foot. Her speed was so fast that it was astonishing.

Nangong Liuyun still needed a period of four days, she must exhaust every means to stall Li Aotian.

Otherwise, she and Nangong Liuyun, the both of them, would be killed by Li Aotian on this uninhabited island.

Su Luo rushed madly about in the jungle with flying speed. She was clearly able to perceive Li Aotian's threat to her life.

After running into the deepest part of the jungle, Su Luo stopped and sucked in a deep breath of air.

Li Aotian couldn't have chased after her this quickly, right?

Seeing that up ahead there was a cave covered with thorny undergrowth, Su Luo quickly pulled apart the undergrowth and rolled in. Very swiftly, she restored the undergrowth to its original shape.

This cave was not at all that small, compared to the one they were living in right now, it was even a little bigger.

However, Su Luo didn't go further inside because if she was trapped inside, then she wouldn't even have one last hope for survival.

Su Luo controlled her breathing, stifling her own breathing, and even her heartbeat was suppressed to a slow pace condition that was nearly impossible to detect.

Her physiological functions were suppressed, and her entire body's blood circulation was slowed down. Her whole body was ice-cold, rigid, sitting pressed up against the wall.

This was merely the beginning, and she was already forced to this extent, the four days in the future, how should she delay him?

Su Luo's mouth had a somewhat forced smile as the corner of her lips lifted slightly.

Alas, after thousands and tens of thousands of calculation, who could have figured that the spirit pinball at that time would smash Li Aotian into a seventh rank expert? If she had known earlier...known earlier, she would have smashed it on herself.

Heaven's evil deeds could stay alive but her own evil deed should not live.

Su Luo was just lamenting.

Suddenly, her head started to hurt, afterwards, a type of heart palpitation feeling started to rise from her chest.

In an abrupt second, her limbs felt ice-cold.

Was discovered!

Li Aotian has actually used his spirit consciousness to probe for her.

He had used his spirit consciousness to lock onto a small area and scanned for her existence, one small field at a time.

What Nangong Liuyun said was not false, as expected, after reaching seventh rank, you would have a huge, qualitative leap.

Su Luo was so upset that she almost hammered the wall.

She couldn't stay here anymore, it was very clear that Li Aotian had already scanned the surrounding area around her.

Su Luo restored her body's vitality, exercised her limbs, and afterwards, quickly drilled out of the cave. Her speed was as fast as lightning as she dashed deeper into the jungle.

In fact, it was really difficult for Su Luo to do so.

At this point of time, she was like the huge bone hanging in front of a dog, wanting Li Aotian to chase after her, but also not allowing him to really catch her.

At the same time, she still had to harass and provoke this dog's anger non-stop. She needed to attract all his hatred onto her own body, to the extent that he didn't have time to visit other people.

## Chapter 453 – Meeting one's foe (5)

---

Making time, allowing Nangong Liuyun enough time to recover. As long as he recovered, then wasn't killing Li Aotian a matter that would take minutes?

But could it be that this, with regards to Su Luo, was too huge?

If her strength exceeded Li Aotian's, then fine, but quite clearly, in front of Li Aotian, she was practically an ant-like, puny existence.

Su Luo's heart was extremely mournful.

But, no matter how plaintive the things she needed to do was, she still must do it.

Su Luo ran at lightning speed, the trees on both sides continue to recede, and her ears were biting cold from the freezing wind.

Su Luo used the spirit dance steps to the pinnacle, but even though her speed was fast, still, every step she took was made with caution. As much as possible, she didn't want to leave behind a trace of herself.

Li Aotian madly chased after Su Luo.

Originally, he thought that chasing after and killing a puny third rank would certainly be an easy matter, as simple as stretching out a hand.

However, until he truly met up with Su Luo in a head-to-head chase, he finally found out how cunning this loathsome girl was. She was like a slippery mudfish that kept escaping, before his hand could touch her, she would slip away, extremely nimbly.

But the more it was like this, the more Li Aotian relentlessly pursued, unwilling to let go.

The him right now had completely overlooked Nangong Liuyun and set him

aside.

The jungle in the deserted mountain had many paths but were jumbled, this gave Su Luo, who was escaping, an extra opportunity to live.

She picked the especially difficult road to flee, however, with spirit dance steps assisting her, her speed was therefore still at its peak.

Very quickly, nightfall come.

This night, Su Luo did not light a fire, instead, she picked a small cave to hide herself in.

The cave was very small, it was barely able to hold Su Luo only after she curled herself up.

Tonight, the night was especially endless.

Outside the cave, the wind was biting cold, whistling and blowing.

In the sky, the moon was obstructed by clouds, leaving behind only a hazy shadow.

However, this kind of atmosphere, as far as Su Luo was concerned, was a small advantage that was given to her.

The wind's howls could blow away any trace of her breathing that remained behind, then the difficulty for Li Aotian in pursuing her would only increase.

Suddenly, Su Luo felt some movements in her space, and she subconsciously entered inside to investigate.

What gave her a nice surprise was that inside her space, there were indications that the little divine dragon, that had originally been trapped in a coma-like state due to swallowing a huge amount of crystal stones, was starting to regain consciousness.

At the same time, Su Luo's gaze looked towards the other side.

She saw that piece of fiery red stone.

At that time, in the Amethyst Fish Palace, her foot had kicked this stone, then her mind was almost taken away, and it had really left her with a lingering fear.

Su Luo took out that piece of fiery red stone from her space, turning it in her

hands, she carefully examined it.

In the end, what was this piece of stone? What kind of mysterious past did it have?

Su Luo had always felt that this chunk of stone was not at all ordinary, it looked like it had a long and old story.

All of a sudden, Su Luo felt her finger hurting slightly. She discovered that when her fingertips were rubbing the fiery red stone, it left traces of blood.

And those traces of blood very quickly were absorbed by the fiery red stone, in a flash, all traces of blood was gone.

This stone could still swallow blood? Su Luo was immediately very curious.

She thought about it, then she punctured her finger, her scarlet blood, drop by drop, tumbled onto the fiery red stone.

“Hiss, sssss—” She seemed to be able to clearly hear the sound of the the fiery red stone absorbing a fair amount of blood.

This...how could it be possible?

Su Luo somewhat curiously turned this chunk of stone around while sizing it up, and didn't supply it with more blood.

Suddenly, it seemed that the fiery red-colored stone was unhappy, and issued a penetrating sound: “Meow—”

Similar to the cries of a cat, an intense and ear-piercing sound resonated in the quiet mountain top.

## Chapter 454 – Meeting one's foe (6)

---

Su Luo immediately jumped from fright, her limbs were all ice-cold.

This chunk of shitty stone! Really knew how to ruin things!

With great difficulty, she had found a small cave to hide in, but now, with its yell, how could she still stay in this cave?

Very likely, in less time than it takes to take a breath, Li Aotian would float here.

Su Luo was so furious that she slapped that fiery red-colored stone once, directly sending it into her chest pocket. She pried apart the underbrush at the cave entrance, then rapidly ran towards the deepest part of the jungle.

As expected, in less than few breaths' time, Li Aotian's tall and straight figure appeared in front of the little cave's entrance.

Now, he was covered from head to toe in a black robe. Under the hazy moonlight, the scars on his face seemed even more malevolent and terrifying. It made the heart of people who gazed at him become fearful.

Li Aotian smashed his fist heavily into the wall of the mountain!

Immediately, a huge, deep hole was made in the mountain wall, and the rocks fragmented into fine powder all at once.

Li Aotian was so infuriated that he looked to the sky and loudly cursed: "Loathsome girl! Don't let me, your daddy, find you! Otherwise, just wait to suffer all the kinds of bitter pain under the heavens!"

That malevolent face, under the hazy moonlight and in the darkness of the mountain forest, seemed especially ghastly. He looked like a devil that had emerged from the spirit world.

Su Luo hadn't escaped that far, and Li Aotian's words had clearly transmitted to her ears.

Su Luo stood at the summit of the mountain, facing the direction where Li Aotian was, she coldly snorted repeatedly and said: "Want to catch this young lady? If you have the ability, then come."

Su Luo turned around, ran away with both legs and rapidly squeezed into the jungle. She darted with full speed into the deep mountains and old forest.

After all, Li Aotian was already seventh rank. in contrast to Su Luo. even if she had the spirit dance step technique, in terms of speed, his nevertheless far surpassed hers.

As a result, after Li Aotian, through good luck, selected the correct path, he very quickly locked on to the place where Su Luo was.

Now, Su Luo was sitting right next to a waterfall, panting for breath.

All around her, the surroundings were pitch-black, so much so that she couldn't even see her fingers in front of her.

At this point of time, it was the darkest period of the night before dawn.

It was dreadfully quiet all around, only the splashing sounds of the water striking down could be heard.

All of a sudden, Su Luo discovered that her consciousness hurt.

Su Luo let out a curse secretly in her heart.

She had just rested for less than the time it took to burn a stick of incense, how could she be locked on again?

Simply like a patch of traditional medication on dogskin, even if you wanted to toss it aside, you couldn't!

Su Luo angrily let out a heavy sigh and thought deeply about a method to escape.

To use the methods in line with the local environment, this direction was a good idea.

Su Luo's gaze sized up her surroundings non-stop.

Up ahead was the huge waterfall, from the top of the mountain wall, it was about three hundred meters high. It looked like a white moving screen, the splashing water rushed down into the river here and rapidly followed along this waterfall to rush forward.

Maybe it was related to the torrential rain that just fell a few days ago, the splashing speed of the water was fast and urgent.

Su Luo looked on helplessly as a piece of floating wood, in a blink of the eye, was carried very far away.

Suddenly, a dead tree tumbled down from the direction of the top of the waterfall.

On top of the dead tree, there were still some green leaves, clearly, the river had uprooted it.

Now, the river was approximately thirty meters wide, and this dead tree was at the center of the river. It was pushed forward very fast by the strength of the waterfall's flow.

The lightbulb in Su Luo's head suddenly flashed, there was not enough time to think it through more thoroughly. With a huge jump, her body was like a legendary large bird spreading its wings, as she leaped rapidly and suddenly towards that dead tree.

Su Luo already took the speed of the river, air resistance and other similar factors into her calculation. Therefore, her body steadily landed on that dead tree.

She hid in the gap between branches, so that even if Li Aotian stood in front of her, he might not necessarily be able to spot her.

The dead tree's speed was very fast, so fast as to pass in the blink of an eye.

Su Luo was able to sense that searching consciousness fade away, she knew that she was once again safe for the time being.

## Chapter 455 – Meeting one's foe (7)

---

Speaking of Li Aotian.

With great difficulty, he locked onto Su Luo's location, and rushed to the pool at the side of the waterfall. When he got there, once again, he lost her trace.

Li Aotian was so furious, he almost went mad.

He never would have imagined, that he who had already entered the seventh rank, would still be toyed with and under the complete control of a third rank like Su Luo.

This was like an ant toying with an elephant, nearly making him furious enough to vomit blood.

Li Aotian didn't know whether Nangong Liuyun was wounded or not, but he was more inclined to think Nangong Liuyun wasn't wounded.

Because on this earth, very, very few could injure Nangong Liuyun.

Therefore, Li Aotian's heart was very worried.

He was worried that Su Luo had turned around and slipped away to return to meet with Nangong Liuyun again. According to Nangong Liuyun's attitude, he would certainly protect that loathsome girl.

Out of the question, he must find this loathsome girl before Nangong Liuyun. If he didn't avenge his hatred, how could he have the face to continue living in this world?

But when all was said and done, what place was this loathsome girl hiding in?

Li Aotian started to search piece by piece in the surrounding area, this way was the most wasteful use of the strength of his consciousness, but he hardly cared a bit.

Even though it was like this, he still hadn't found a bit of Su Luo's trace, it was as if she had completely disappeared from this earth.

This was impossible!

Li Aotian silently stood in front of the waterfall, his expression was coldly detached, like frosty ice, as he gazed at the waterfall.

All of a sudden, he remembered the waterfall behind his own family's mountain, where a cave was hidden behind the waterfall. It was obstructed by a water screen, if not told, no one would know.

But after passing through the waterfall, over there was the treasure storehouse for Jade Lake Palace.

Li Aotian's features turned cold, he gave a cold snort and his figure rose from the ground. Suddenly and with fast speed, he rushed towards the waterfall.

From over three hundred meters high, the waterfall was rushing down, how great ought that water's impact be?

Even if it was Li Aotian, he also would find it difficult to manage.

But hatred made a person strong.

All of Li Aotian's hatred was attracted to Su Luo, he was itching to tear her into pieces, how could he let her go so easily?

Li Aotian rushed in under the huge water pressure, he searched the cliff wall inch by inch behind the waterfall, not letting any suspicious points slip by.

An inch by inch search, with time passing by in minutes and seconds. Li Aotian felt it was an extremely strenuous task.

Because he had used his consciousness to search too much, he felt somewhat dizzy and light-headed. But, he tossed his head and continued to persist in his search.

However, what made him extremely disappointed was that this cliff wall actually didn't have any mystery. It didn't even have a small hole, let alone a cave.

Li Aotian was so furious that his fist smashed in it, immediately, the rumbling,

drum-like sounds echoed, with rocks flying in the air.

A five meter deep, small cave appeared in front of him.

However, it was quite unfortunate that this small cave was smashed by him.

In the end, where was that loathsome girl hiding!

Li Aotian covered his head that was in pain and pondered non-stop.

Suddenly, his gaze looked downwards, and it just so happened to catch sight of a piece of floating wood that was being pushed forward with a very fast speed.

All of a sudden, a light turned on in his head!

It might really be possible!

A haughty, cold and severe smile appeared on Li Aotian's face. He very quickly flew down and landed on top of a very small piece of floating wood.

Like a small, lonely boat on the sea surface.

Both feet on the floating wood, he stretched out his breathing, making the weight of his body almost negligible. Not only that, he also continuously used the wind power to press forward and accelerate its speed.

Just like this, he followed the river, moving forward with flying speed. His speed, when compared to Su Luo's heavy, dead tree's speed, didn't know how many times greater it was.

But speaking of Su Luo who had jumped on the dead tree, since fleeing outside of Li Aotian's mind searches, she had therefore relaxed her mental guard by a lot.

## Chapter 456 – Meeting one's foe (8)

---

From day to night, then again, from night to the early morning, her mind had concentrated to a high degree and her speed had also risen to its extreme.

These made Su Luo somewhat unable to endure. She was tired. In the hazy moonlight, she felt a faint stabbing pain in her head.

Su Luo was suddenly startled awake.

Lying on her stomach on the dead tree, she faintly saw a piece of wood drifting towards her, that had a shadow on top of it.

Even though she couldn't see it clearly, Su Luo nevertheless recognized that it was Li Aotian.

He was truly like a lingering ghost.

Su Luo secretly cursed in her heart.

What's to be done? She also couldn't stay on this dead tree. But as for escaping.....She was afraid it also wouldn't be that easy.

Su Luo raised her eye to survey all around.

The place was slightly similar to the Three Gorges (1), with steep cliffs on both sides, the precipice was like the blade of a knife. It was one gorge after another, forming pools like in the Yantze river, the water was rapid, practically in one breath's time, it would push her very far.

She saw Li Aotian was just about to catch up to her.

Time was extremely pressing.

Su Luo couldn't wait to think some more. She tore the lower part of her robe and placed it in a crevice of the dead tree, seeming as if it was there while not being there.

This way, it looked as if she was hidden under a branch.

Up ahead at the bend, in the blind spot from Li Aotian's line of sight, Su Luo made a leaping jump. With one hand, she grabbed the root of a willow that extended out from a steep, overhanging cliff.

Su Luo's body was as lithe as a swallow, borrowing the power of the willow branch to swing and jump. Again, in the blink of an eye, her figure had already disappeared.

She had already hidden herself in the branches with thick leaves at the top of an ancient tree.

Here, all around were all sheer cliffs, behind her was Li Aotian chasing to kill her. As long as she showed her face, he would catch sight of her. Therefore, Su Luo obediently stayed in that tree, hiding behind those lush, abundant branches and leaves.

Su Luo curled up her body, letting her physiological functions adjust to operate at its lowest state.

Her heart rhythm, blood circulation, breathing sounds and all her physiological functions, were all, without exception, constrained.

At this moment, her whole body was ice-cold, stiff, like a snake in hibernation and almost lifeless.

She was gambling.

She was gambling that Li Aotian wouldn't use his consciousness to search on top of the river, because to penetrate through water resistance was much harder compared to air.

Moreover, Li Aotian had just promoted to seventh rank, and his mental strength hadn't reached the level needed to constantly supply him with the energy to trace her.

Li Aotian aggressively came over in pursuit to attack.

Indeed, as Su Luo expected, before, because searching the waterfall had wasted too much mental strength, so now, he didn't use it again. Rather, he wholeheartedly urged the piece of wood to pursue at a fast speed, then he

would attack.

Li Aotian's gaze landed on top of that dead tree, originally, he didn't care, but very quickly, his sharp gaze found that yellow color between the tree leaves.

If he didn't remember it wrongly, Su Luo, that loathsome girl, was precisely wearing a yellow silk skirt.

Li Aotian's heart immediately became ecstatic!

He hastened the wood beneath his feet to catch up with that dead tree at flying speed.

Consequently...Just like that, with bad luck, he passed right by where Su Luo was hiding in that ancient tree.

When he passed by, Su Luo's eyes closed slightly, almost halting all of her physiological functions.

After all, the difference in her strength compared to Li Aotian's was too great, if there was even the slightest of movement, he would be able to perceive the clue.

Therefore, Su Luo must be cautious and prudent.

But what made her very happy was that Li Aotian's attention was attracted by that yellow cloth. He completely didn't foresee that the real her was hidden within his reach in the periphery.

Li Aotian, lacking complete awareness, rushed forward, his speed was fast to an unimaginable state.

Seeing Li Aotian rush forward, afterwards, Su Luo slowly restored her body's functions. She exercised her limbs a little, then began to leave this ancient tree.

Here, she had already left her scent, a difficult-to-erase trace.

*1) Three Gorges, otherwise known as Yangtze (Yellow River) Gorges in China, is a beautiful scenic place with lots of places of historical importance along its banks, but the Three Gorges dam built on top of it has changed the environment of the Three Gorges by a lot.*

## Chapter 457 – Meeting one's foe (9)

---

With Li Aotian's nature, he was merely temporarily deceived by her, when he became clear-headed, he would definitely find the clues in this ancient tree.

There wasn't enough time for Su Luo to think further, and she climbed up the rock face of the sheer cliffs.

Aside from the waterway, she could only climb up this precipice, then she would have a chance to live.

Su Luo's speed was extremely fast, her movements were also well-hidden, the places she jumped to was secretive and covered up. With her heart and soul, she rushed forward while Li Aotian unexpectedly hadn't sensed her.

Li Aotian had set all his heart on top of that dead tree.

He concentrated his spirit powers onto the wood under his feet, the surrounding wind power pushed the floating wood to advance forward rapidly.

Very quickly, Li Aotian was about one hundred meters away from that dead tree.

One could see the corner of Li Aotian's mouth hook into an ice-cold, malicious sneer. His eyes produced a sinister radiance.

"Loathsome girl! This time, let's see where you will run to!" Li Aotian's body sprung up, separated by a distance of one hundred meters, he directly leaped across the distance and onto that dead tree.

"Loathsome girl, roll out from there!" Li Aotian sent a heavy palm strike towards the dead tree!

In order to prevent the loathsome girl from escaping by diving into the water, he condensed almost all of his spirit power to surround that dead tree.

Now, this dead tree was trapped in a net he arranged, not even a housefly could fly out.

But what made Li Aotian despair was that after his palm smashed down, that yellow piece of skirt immediately became dust.

But he still couldn't even see Su Luo's shadow.

Li Aotian looked at the destroyed skirt that was now dust, and his heart immediately became infuriated!

He was once again played by Su Luo, that loathsome girl!

Evidently, that loathsome girl hadn't been on this dead tree for a long time, but she had deliberately left pieces of her clothing behind to draw him here!

Having been repeatedly cheated and taken in, moreover, every time suffering the loss at identical places, Li Aotian was furious to the point of bursting into mad howls and cries. He was so angry, he smashed this dead tree into fine powder in just one strike.

The loathsome girl was not here, then where did she go?

As long as he thought of Su Luo, this loathsome girl, hidden on the side, watching him chase after the fake article, he would be so enraged as to want to kill someone.

Li Aotian aggressively rushed back to the path he came from.

Along the way, he seemed not to pay the slightest to his spirit power, using it extravagantly while traveling.

Under this kind of circumstances, Li Aotian very quickly found traces of the scent Su Luo left behind in that willow tree.

This place he really did walk by a moment ago, and also when he accelerated his pace was in this place.

As it turned out, at that time, that loathsome girl was actually hiding here, watching him doing something stupid. Very likely, that loathsome girl, at that moment, had even mocked him for being stupid.

Li Aotian was simply infuriated to an extreme degree.

He released his spirit force, followed Su Luo's scent and unceasingly searched. Finally, following the road she walked past where she left behind some traces, tightly pursued behind her.

Speaking of Su Luo.

She had temporarily shaken off Li Aotian, but she still hadn't relaxed a bit because she knew how much stronger Li Aotian was compared to her. At any time, he could catch up to her once more to kill her.

Su Luo hid her scent as much as possible as she traversed through the forest at high speeds.

She passed the fourth day unscathed.

The fifth day, half of the day had already passed.

Su Luo secretly sighed in her heart, wishing that the fifth and sixth day both would pass and arrive more quickly to the seventh day, that would be best.

Just thinking of this, suddenly, a trace of spirit force movement could be felt by Su Luo. Su Luo's heart was delighted and her consciousness searched inside to see.

She saw the little divine dragon that had originally been lying on his back on top of the lawn, giving off little snoring sounds while sounds asleep, at this moment he had started to wake up after already being asleep for a long time.

One could only see his rotund little body sit up with his two little paws rubbing his drowsy, sleepy eyes. His little face was bewildered and innocent at the same time, with a blank and foolish appearance, simply so adorable she was about to burst.

Su Luo immediately stretched out her hands to fish him out and cheerfully poked his little head: "Hey, this time, you finally woke up. See if next time you would dare to pilfer food."

## Chapter 458 – Meeting one’s foe (10)

---

Recalling those several hundred pieces of crystal stones vanishing in a blink of an eye, Su Luo still felt her flesh in serious pain.

The little divine dragon, having been watched by Su Luo with such interest, somewhat bashfully covered his little face. Through the small cracks in his paws, he stealthily looked at Su Luo.

Su Luo laughingly pulled open his two little paws and poked at his head: “Having swallowed so many crystal stones, you ought to have made some progress, right?”

Once he heard this, the little divine dragon immediately became excited.

She only saw his furry little head fiercely nodding, two huge, black, slippery eyes were full of excitement, repeatedly: “Awoo,awoo——” So great, so awesome.

He was Su Luo’s contract beast, so there was no problem with them communicating mind to mind.

“In what way is it awesome?” Right now, Su Luo was in the midst of being chased all over the place while she fled in disarray. Once she heard the little divine dragon saying he was very awesome and difficult to deal with, she immediately became more spirited.

Oh God, wasn’t her luck rather too good? Over there, she was just being pursued to be killed till she was struggling at death’s door, while on this side, the little divine dragon coaxed her with a mouthful of words?

Su Luo was immersed in the boundless delusions of happiness.

The little divine dragon did not know his master was reveling in delusions, one could only see his little paws open up to count: “One, two, three, four, five——”

Seeing Su Luo ignoring him, he started again to count on the other paw: “One, two, three, four, five— —”

Su Luo saw him counting again and again, still up able to go up further, she couldn't help but to ask in surprise: “This ‘one, two, three, four, five’ what does it mean?”

Didn't know why, but she had a faint, not-so-good premonition.

The little divine dragon had opened wide his large, limpid eyes that were innocent and adorable, as he looked at Su Luo perplexedly: “Awoooo— —” Master, fifth rank, I'm a fifth rank— — “What?” Su Luo suddenly felt things in front of her eyes darken, and she nearly tumbled to the ground on the spot.

Before, she had thought the little divine dragon was really very difficult to deal with, she didn't expect that he was only at fifth rank!

Su Luo was helpless as well as speechless, with a sad heart that ached in pain, she looked at the little divine dragon. She sighed and said ‘alas’ unceasingly.

It really was that the greater the hope, the greater the disappointment.

The little divine dragon didn't know why, all of a sudden, Master's mood became downcast. He somewhat anxiously and on tenterhooks tugged at her clothing.

Su Luo only smiled and rubbed his head: “Wanting to put all the pressure on your body is because your family's owner is too useless. It has nothing to do with you.”

Su Luo somewhat helplessly sighed.

In terms of talent and opportunity, each point, she was not lacking compared to others, but her only weakness was time.

She arrived in this world too late, when she started, it was much later than others, to the extent that she must catch up to them at all cost.

A gap of ten years' time, whereas now, she had crossed over for less than a few months.

Wanting her to cut down the gap of ten years in a short while was practically impossible.

However, she firmly believed that as long as she was given time, two years, no, only one year, her strength would absolutely be able to step on Li Aotian's head.

The little divine dragon tugged at Su Luo's clothing somewhat restlessly. He still hadn't told Master about the latest skill he obtained...

Seeing his Master's appearance of heaving deep sighs, the little divine dragon very smartly sat on the ground with his chin resting on both paws. His pair of monochrome, large, limpid, innocent eyes watched his little Master.

"Awoo——"There was a bad person!

Suddenly, the little divine dragon gave a light howling sound.

At the same time, Su Luo also felt danger approaching.

Li Aotian, this person whose influence still lingered on like a ghost, had actually once again caught up to her!

Su Luo picked up the little divine dragon and immediately turned around to run.

Now, the little divine dragon had a serious expression on his little face.

If you want to discuss danger, then his perceptiveness was still even stronger compared to Su Luo's. Therefore, he could clearly sense the formidable strength of the enemy.

This time Li Aotian had already nearly gone berserk, his speed was several times faster than before.

## Chapter 459 – Meeting one's foe (11)

---

Without waiting for Su Luo to find a path to flee for her life, Li Aotian already stood in front of her.

Su Luo's heart was suddenly startled and subconsciously she sent the little divine dragon back into her space.

Li Aotian, seeing Su Luo in front of him, his eyes burst out with a scathing, murderous aura.

“Loathsome girl, you actually have some skills. Under the pressure of my pursuit, you can actually still last a day and a night.” Li Aotian's cold and gloomy gaze stared at Su Luo.

Su Luo's heart restrained her fear, while her face was calm and collected without a single ripple. She gave a shallow smile: “Did you like that dead tree?”

As much as possible, Su Luo stalled for time, her head thinking deeply of ways to escape.

Just mentioning this, Li Aotian's eyes burst into a raging flame: “Loathsome girl! You court death!”

Su Luo smiled indifferently: “You think you could really kill me?”

“Then just try it, see whether I can or can not strike you, loathsome girl, dead with one palm. To save the effort that you will go out again to cause calamity in the human world.” Li Aotian had the appearance of a champion that worked on behalf of the heavens.

While talking, he also condensed his spirit power, just wishing to hack towards Su Luo's head!

“Hold it!” Su Luo raised her hand with a smile that was not quite a smile as she raised an eyebrow to look at him: “Could it be that you don't have even a little

bit of interest in those secret books I took from the Amethyst Fish Palace?”

Li Aotian’s palm immediately stiffened on the spot.

He couldn’t help but to want to slap his own head.

These few days, his mind was all placed on killing this loathsome girl for revenge. He absolutely forgot that in the Amethyst Fish Palace, this loathsome girl’s luck had been so good as to burst. In one breath, she had seized a lot of secret books.

Those secret books were rarely seen, even the Jade Lake’s Palace would drool over them.

If he could bring back a few secret books, in all likelihood, the family would value him even more.

Li Aotian thought up to here, immediately, his expression became frosty. Towering above her, he glared at Su Luo: “Loathsome girl, quickly hand over the secret books!”

How could Su Luo possibly just hand over the secret books?

Without a doubt, as long as she handed over the secret books, immediately after, he would hack her to death.

Su Luo’s face looked somewhat embarrassed, her long, shapely eyebrows wrinkled: “But...the secret books were hidden away by me.”

“Where did you hide it?!” In any case, this loathsome girl was already an object in his pocket, killing her earlier or later, both would end up with her being dead.

Su Luo fearfully watched him, with her expression carrying a slight nervousness: “If I were to hand over the secret books, are you going to let me go?”

Li Aotian’s expression paused, a murderous intent flashed through his eyes, but he only sneered: “Not kill you? This, I could consider.”

Merely consider and nothing more.

Of course, Su Luo realized his desire to kill her wouldn’t die.

They were now in a state where if one didn’t die, then the enmity wouldn’t be

extinguished. If it was not her dead, then it was him.

Although she deeply understood this situation, Su Luo's expression was still feigning innocence and sincerity.

Seeing Li Aotian saying this, she seemed to believe him immediately: "Okay, as long as you let me go, I will bring you to find the secret books!"

Li Aotian looked her up and down once, his eyebrows knotted tightly: "Don't even consider some damnable clever plan!"

"Wherefore would I have some crafty plan?" Su Luo had an innocent expression on her face while spreading her hands open.

Li Aotian thought about it but was still not reassured: "This won't do, you, loathsome girl, have too many cunning ideas, simply impossible to guard against."

He just finished speaking when he took out a rope and placed both of Su Luo's hands behind her back. He bound her hands directly and efficiently.

One look at that rope, and Su Luo immediately became happy.

This item was something she saw not long ago.

She remembered that at that time in Sunset Mountain Range, Er Huang had been afraid she would escape, so she had bound her, attempting to escort her to Jade Lake's Palace.

However, it was very unfortunate that on the way there, Er Huang was gotten rid of by the little divine dragon's dad.

# Chapter 460 – Fleeing on the uninhabited island (1)

---

Su Luo remembered the rope at that time was red in color, and also remembered what Er Huang said at that time. It was a restraining spirit rope specifically used to bind a criminal without any spirit power.

However——

Su Luo discovered that the rope tying her now was a slightly deeper color than the one from that time. She used spirit power, wanting to untie it, but discovered that the more spirit power she used, the deeper the red rope would sink into her flesh. It was so painful she grimaced.

Li Aotian arrogantly swept a glance at Su Luo, laughing grimly, he said: “ A naive, loathsome girl, who haven’t seen the world, this is a restraining immortal rope. Even an immortal tied by this won’t be able to escape. I will watch how you try to escape this time!”

Li Aotian’s gaze swept towards both of Su Luo’s legs.

If the loathsome girl still wanted to escape, he didn’t mind breaking both of her legs.

Su Luo frowned slightly.

It seemed that this red rope, compared to Er Huang’s rope at that time, would be considered the upgraded version.

Also, it was not too surprising, stuff that was suitable to be taken out by the second young master of Jade Lake’s Palace, how could the item’s rank be equal to ones carried by a servant girl. In this instance, it was of much higher grade.

Su Luo couldn’t help but to sigh inwardly in her heart.

Even though she had temporarily preserved her life, however, she was tied up like this. Both of her legs and hands were tied up by the restraining immortal rope, even if she wanted to escape, it would be difficult.

Li Aotian coldly glared at her: “Quickly lead the way in the front, if we don’t find the secret books by tonight, then I will chop off one of your hands!”

Look at that, so easily, he would cut off a person’s limbs. What a violent man.

Su Luo faintly sighed again.

Being rushed by Li Aotian to walk forward, Su Luo was urgently communicating with the little divine dragon in her head.

“What kind of powerful magical beast is on this uninhabited island?” Su Luo asked, full of hope.

The little dragon, with his little head crooked at an angle, pondered for a moment, afterwards, he shook his head.

...

He truly couldn’t sense anything...

Su Luo again changed to another method: “Then, is there a place to hide treasures?”

Once he heard treasure, the little divine dragon immediately started to get excited.

“Awoo,awoo,awoo——” There was, there was, there was!

Once she mentioned cleaning up treasure, the little divine dragon was so excited he nearly jumped up.

Su Luo thought to herself, places where treasures were hidden definitely would have all kinds of traps and pitfalls.

Thinking this way, Su Luo’s heart was slightly relieved.

Along the way, Li Aotian continuously made sarcastic remarks to Su Luo, using the slightest pretext to berate her.

“In the end, where is it hidden? If you dare to deceive me, humph!” Li Aotian snorted out a cold sound from his nose.

Su Luo happily sent him a gratuitous glance: “When I was running away in a panic, I didn’t have time to choose the route, how could I remember everything that clearly?”

“Loathsome girl, you dare to toy with me!” Li Aotian’s expression was getting angry, his eyes were steaming with the desire to commit murder.

“How could I dare to toy with you, the Jade Lake Palace’s second young master.” Su Luo cast him a glance, snorting twice: “The rope is bound so tightly, how could I walk away so quickly.”

Li Aotian cast cold, sidelong glances at her: “The rope binding you could cut off both of your arms, you choose yourself.”

Su Luo’s expression was indignant, yet she had no other choice but to remain silent.

She was aware that Li Aotian hated her nearly to the point of wanting to cut her into eight chunks. If she didn’t have the secret books to attract him, it was for sure he would have already made his move.

Su Luo’s expression assumed a feeling of being fearful and helpless, but she was communicating with the little divine dragon non-stop in her mind.

Following the direction he pointed to, bit by bit, they got closer to the target area.

The color of the sky gradually darkened.

The two of them were still walking in the jungle.

Very quickly, nightfall arrived, a few remnant stars hung in the desolate sky.

Li Aotian’s footsteps suddenly halted, he coldly and furiously shouted at Su Luo: “Why have we still not arrived? Loathsome girl, are you toying with me?”

Su Luo gave a cold snort: “It’s up ahead, we are almost there.”

“Do you believe it or not that I will immediately kill you!: Li Aotian’s patience was extremely limited.

# Chapter 461 – Fleeing on the uninhabited island (2)

---

If along the way, Su Luo hadn't unceasingly reminded him how valuable the secret books were, maybe he would have already been unable to bear it and hacked Su Luo to death with a palm strike.

Su Luo looked at the color of the sky, deliberately letting out a sigh: "It seems tonight, we will arrive at our destination, very likely, it will be somewhat difficult."

"Stop and rest." Li Aotian thought about it, finally, he still decided to stop and reorganize a little.

For this one day and one night, Su Luo had run until her vision blurred and she was dizzy. Him chasing after her behind her was also not relaxing, especially when it came to the mental strength that had been squandered excessively. He used it until some pain sprouted in his head.

He needed some time to restore his mental strength.

Li Aotian, in passing, conveniently grabbed another red-colored rope and coldly said to Su Luo: "Loathsome girl, you must really want to take advantage of when I cultivate to escape, right?"

In her capacity as a prisoner, after being caught, of course she could not admit it. Su Luo firmly shook her head: "How can I even escape?"

"Humph." Li Aotian definitely did not believe her lies, with one move, he pushed Su Luo down, the red-colored rope was wrapped around her legs twice and then tied into a dead knot.

"This time, see how you can run." Li Aotian stood up with a malevolent appearance as he glared at Su Luo. His tone was cold and strange, such that it

could make a person's back tremble.

This restraining immortal rope, the more she struggled, the tighter it would bind her, and even harder it would be to untie.

There were countless number of ways the restraining immortal rope could be tied, only the person tying the rope would know what knot was used. Only if you knew the knot would you be able to untie it.

As a result, Li Aotian was basically not worried that Su Luo would run.

After he was finished dealing with Su Luo, Li Aotian whirled around and left. He flew to an ancient tree at the side and closed his eyes, sitting down to meditate.

This position he picked to practice his cultivation in was very good.

His point of view just so happened to face the position where Su Luo sat, merely opening his eyes slightly, he was then able to view Su Luo's every movement.

Naturally, in the beginning, Su Luo was expressionless and well-behaved.

She sat leaning against the tree trunk, motionlessly recuperating with her eyes closed, as if she had already accepted the fact she was his prisoner. She had a helpless appearance of having resigned herself to her fate.

A sneer hooked up at the corner of Li Aotian's mouth, a sinister radiance flashing through his eyes.

Resigned herself to fate? On this uninhabited island, in front of her, he was the heavens! At any time, he could order her to drop dead!

But to just kill her was letting her off too lightly. Wait until he got the secret books, afterwards, he would torment her unceasingly, letting her taste what was called, 'it would be better to die than to live'.

Li Aotian had complete confidence in his own strength. He also had complete confidence in the might of the restraining immortal rope.

He firmly believed that Su Luo could not possibly escape.

In fact, it really was like this, now, Su Luo really couldn't move a single step.

However, Li Aotian nevertheless overlooked a point through negligence.

Su Luo could not move, but the little divine dragon could.

In the blind spot that Li Aotian could not see, Su Luo stealthily released the little divine dragon.

Originally, she had wanted to tell the little divine dragon to go cause a disturbance, but unexpectedly, this little thing saw that she was tied up. Immediately, he became angry and readily took a bite out of the red-colored rope at her back.

One could only hear a slight snapping sound.

The rumored legendary restraining immortal rope, a treasure that Li Aotian had complete confidence in, was immediately bitten apart by the little divine dragon!

Su Luo was immediately shocked!

This damnable thing, what kind of treasure was it considered as! Fancy that Li Aotian was still bragging about it in front of her. He was bragging as if only the heavens had this rope and it did not exist on earth.

But who would have thought that it couldn't even resist the little divine dragon's mouthful of teeth.

Li Aotian detected some difference, he swept an indifferent, meaningful glance towards Su Luo.

It was already too late for Su Luo to close her eyes in rest, rushing into this gap, she cast a fawning expression towards Li Aotian.

Li Aotian only felt the corner of his eyes move and unsympathetically turned his face away.

Now the loathsome girl knew to be afraid? She wanted to make use of the honey trap? She could dream on for a thousand years!

# Chapter 462 – Fleeing on the uninhabited island (3)

---

Li Aotian's heart extremely looked down upon Su Luo, he gave a cold humph and continued to cultivate.

How could he have known that the reason why Su Luo was like this was in order to show the enemy she was weak. She deliberately made him relax his guard so she could make good preparations for her own escape.

A fugitive fleeing from the law who didn't want to escape was not a good fugitive. Su Luo, this good example of a fugitive, was prepared to escape at any time.

Just after Li Aotian resumed his cultivation state, Su Luo then hid the little divine dragon under her skirt, allowing him to bite apart the red rope binding her legs.

The little divine dragon was very obedient. This time, he even cleverly covered his little mouth while his snow-white sharp teeth slowly grinded away at the rope, afraid of producing even the slightest sounds.

That cautious and serious little appearance gave Su Luo's heart an extremely comforting feeling from watching.

Very quickly, the restraining immortal rope on Su Luo's leg was bitten off by the little divine dragon, and both her arms and legs had their freedom restored.

Su Luo insincerely observed Li Aotian, seeing him immersed deeply in the midst of cultivation, a faint smile appeared at the corner of her mouth.

If she didn't go now, then when should she wait until?

There wasn't enough time to think some more, Su Luo picked up the little

divine dragon. In the time it took for her to take off and land a few times, she had already vanished into the jungle.

All of this took place noiselessly, Li Aotian, who was immersed in the midst of cultivation, completely did not detect it.

He simply did not know, that unexpectedly, Su Luo who was tied up with the restraining immortal rope, could escape.

Seconds and minutes of time passed.

After approximately an hour had passed, Li Aotian finished his cultivation. Slowly, he opened his tightly closed pair of eyes.

After circulating for an hour, his mental strength had already been restored by thirty percent.

He decided that if this time, the loathsome girl toyed with him once again, he certainly would first break one of her arms and see if she still dared to do it.

Li Aotian's gaze swept towards the direction where Su Luo was.

Suddenly— —

The grim laugh at the corner of his mouth was frozen in an instant.

Li Aotian's eyes were full of an unimaginable expression. His body immediately flew down from the ancient tree, directly landing at the place Su Luo was sitting before.

In the end, where did the person go to?

Wasn't her hands and feet bound by the restraining immortal rope? In spite of everything, she could still escape?

Li Aotian was simply incredulous.

This matter had already exceeded his scope of comprehension. No matter what, he could not imagine, in the end, how this matter could have happened.

Undoubtedly, her hands and feet were bound, a person undoubtedly bound by restraining immortal rope. The more she moved, the deeper the restraining immortal rope would sink into her flesh. Finally, it was completely capable of cutting off a person's two legs while they were still alive.

But nevertheless, he had lost the loathsome girl's trace.

Li Aotian released his consciousness and unceasingly searched the surroundings, as if trying to find Su Luo who was dying because of trying to escape, and so was tightly strangled by the restraining immortal rope.

However, Su Luo had already escaped and disappeared without a trace. How could she have let him find her?

Li Aotian very quickly was infuriated until he was nearly insane!!!

He had known since earlier that this loathsome girl was as crafty as a fox. Earlier, he should have smashed her into a meat patty when he caught her.

But time and time again, she led him by the nose, and he was repeatedly careless, again and again.

From before, when he froze her into an ice-sculpture, and up until now, when he used the restraining immortal rope to bind her. Originally, he believed it was absolutely failproof, but always, at the most critical time, something would go wrong and she would escape.

Li Aotian almost suspected whether Su Luo, this loathsome girl, was a cat in a formal incarnation with nine lives? How could she avert disaster time and time again?

He vowed!

This time, when he found that loathsome girl again, don't need to bother with how to torment her, directly smashing her into meat patty was the most dependable!

Li Aotian's fist clenched tightly at his side, taking large strides, he left this place.

This time, Su Luo ran away very quickly, and also with the help of the little divine dragon's directions, so if Li Aotian imagined he would find her in a little while like before, it would be very difficult.

# Chapter 463 – Fleeing on the uninhabited island (4)

---

She didn't know how long she had been running in the forest, the sky was indistinct and hazy.

In the east, a reddish sun slowly rose, little by little breaking through the darkness of dawn.

The light of daybreak penetrated through the sky, with large areas of orange and reddish clouds.

The fifth day had passed, today was already the sixth day that Nangong Liuyun had mentioned before.

Su Luo somewhat helplessly forced out a bitter smile.

These two days and two nights of fleeing had been really hair-raising, with dangers springing up all around, and every time, she would be hovering on the verge of life or death. If it was not for her being quick-witted, she didn't know how many times she would have already died.

Now, it was already the sixth day, one more day, in another day, Nangong Liuyun's martial arts would be completely restored. Then, she would not have to flee all over the place like she was doing right now.

Su Luo raised her head to look at the gorgeous red clouds in the sky. She fished out the little divine dragon, rubbing his head, she said: "Quickly, go ahead to lead the way, we don't have much time."

The little divine dragon knowingly replied with two barking sounds, as his little body traveled rapidly through the forest. His speed was so fast as to pass by in an instant.

Su Luo followed behind his body, when it was necessary, she would use spirit dance steps to flee on top of the trees.

Because this way, with Li Aotian wanting to pursue her, maybe she could increase her level. Su Luo didn't demand that she defeat him, just as long as she could endure until Nangong Liuyun came out of closed door cultivation would be good enough.

The sun in the east gradually moved overhead in the sky.

Now, it was already noon.

All of a sudden, the little divine dragon pointed towards a hidden cave up ahead. He turned his little head and barked directly at Su Luo.

“Awoo, awoo, awoo——” Detour, detour! There is a magical beast! There is a magical beast!

“Magical beast?” Su Luo was immediately astonished.

Before, she found it very strange that there wasn't even a single magical beast on this uninhabited island. She didn't expect for there to actually be one on the island.

“Awoo, awoo, awoo!” There is an infant beast! There is an infant beast!

Joyful, excited rays of light clearly flashed through the little divine dragon's large, monochromatic eyes. He was itching to rush in immediately to try and find the young magical beast to play with.

“How could there be a magical beast here?” Su Luo felt this was somewhat sudden.

After all, this island didn't seem to have a single magical beast, then unexpectedly, a magical beast appearing here, moreover, it even had a young offspring?

“Is this magical beast difficult to deal with?”

“Awoo, awoo, awoo——” Seventh rank! Seventh rank magical beast!

The little divine dragon excitedly gestured while speaking and nodded his head fiercely at Su Luo.

Seventh rank magical beast!

Su Luo's heart was suddenly startled, there was actually a seventh rank magical beast on this uninhabited island?

She was just about to carry the little divine dragon and take a detour when suddenly, a lightbulb lit up in her mind.

Seventh rank magical beast...Li Aotian was also seventh rank ah...hey, hey!

The corner of Su Luo's mouth hooked into a smirk of hatching an evil scheme, as she leaned into the little divine dragon's ear and muttered a few sentences in a low tone.

The little divine dragon evidently was very interested in this kind of risky adventure, his little head nodding repeatedly. In the blink of an eye, his little body disappeared before Su Luo's eyes.

Su Luo used the Celestial Spirit Water and sprinkled it in a corner gap in the distance, to draw the mother magical beast away. At the same time, this allowed the little divine dragon to go in with flying speed, pick up an infant beast, then run.

After the preparations were completed, Su Luo lay on her stomach behind an ancient tree not far away. Then, she saw a huge brown bear sniffing its nose, looking for an objective.

Very quickly, it found the Celestial Spirit Water on the ground.

What Su Luo carried out was just too cunning, she had spilled the large majority of the water on the ground, only leaving a little in the cup.

The brown bear readily drank that little mouthful of Celestial Spirit Water in the cup in one gulp, very quickly, it was attracted to a stop by this mystical flavor. Like it had taken drugs, it was unable to let go ever again.

The infant beast in the cave yelled 'awoo, awoo'. It ignored the infant and only bowed down its head and buried it into the ground, sniffing here and there. It swallowed the weeds that carried some soil into its mouth.

The little divine dragon had already taken out that infant beast, and ran to in front of Su Luo. Before he could take credit for his achievement, that little infant

bear gave sharp screeching sounds of 'awoo, awoo'.

Su Luo secretly said in her heart: "Oh no!"

# Chapter 464 – Fleeing on the uninhabited island (5)

---

Sure enough, once the mommy brown bear saw her own family's young being taken away by a person, at once, she became furious!

“Quickly run!” Su Luo yelled loudly. She picked up the little divine dragon and the little bear to put them into her space, released her legs, and ran back towards the road she came from.

Li Aotian was there!

Wherefore would the mommy bear still care about the sweet water on the ground, she opened up her heavy four legs and rushed towards Su Luo's back with flying speed.

The brown bear was still in the midst of using her strong force, so speed-wise, she still wasn't considered very fast. Therefore, under the circumstances of Su Luo taking the first opportunity to quickly flee a step ahead, wanting to catch up to her was very difficult.

But her speed was still faster than Su Luo had planned on, following the passing of time, the distance between the two continuously pulled closer.

Su Luo couldn't help but secretly complain bitterly in her heart.

Before, she wished that Li Aotian would never catch up to her, but now, she longed for Li Aotian to appear in front of her like an immortal god in the next moment, that would be great.

Along with the distance being constantly pulled closer, Su Luo practically could feel the heat from the roar the mommy brown bear sprayed at her.

Ten meters...

Five meters...

Three meters...

The distance between the two had already gotten close to the limit.

At any moment, the mommy brown bear would suddenly jump up to quickly pounce at Su Luo— Just at this critical moment!

Li Aotian descended like an immortal god, his tall and straight figure appeared on the broad road up ahead. He had both hands crossed in front of his chest, standing there calmly as if waiting for Su Luo to walk right into his trap.

Su Luo's heart was immediately overjoyed.

Not afraid you were here, only afraid you weren't here!

She rushed towards Li Aotian, at the same time, she happily yelled in a loud voice: "Boss, didn't you want to eat a young brown bear? I returned after catching one for you, take it!"

While speaking, Su Luo tossed that very small infant brown bear towards Li Aotian's chest.

Li Aotian subconsciously caught it, but at the same time, he frowned.

What rubbish was this loathsome girl saying? Who was the boss? Really funny.

However, an infant brown bear...Li Aotian's eye immediately began to shine.

It was said that an infant brown bear was surprisingly effective when used to restore someone's appearance, now that his appearance was completely ruined, what he needed the most was an infant brown bear.

The loathsome girl actually did a good deed.

Li Aotian steadily caught the infant brown bear, however, before waiting for him to settle it after the catch, a majestic, formidable, huge brown bear immediately rushed forward from Su Luo's back, ruthlessly pouncing towards Li Aotian!

Li Aotian temporarily hadn't noticed that his face was slashed by the sharp claws of the bear's forepaw, leaving behind a deep, bloody scar.

Li Aotian's heart was immediately startled.

His heart couldn't help but rain out curses.

He should have known earlier that the loathsome girl would have bad intentions, as it turned out, she had planned this opportunity to cause him trouble.

But now, his face was injured, and hatred was already created. Li Aotian knew perfectly well that this was Su Luo's plan, yet still, he was honor-bound to throw himself into the trap.

This was exactly what Su Luo had overtly plotted.

The brown bear's heart was already set on Li Aotian being the master schemer. It was him that wanted to eat her darling baby, she hated Li Aotian to the bone.

Li Aotian's face was ruined, so he had been in a rage from earlier, how could he easily let this huge, foolish bear go?

Consequently a man and a beast, just like this, became tangled up in a fight together.

Momentarily, they were caught up in an irresolvable fight.

Li Aotian was a seventh rank expert.

The huge brown bear was a seventh rank magical beast.

There was hardly any difference in strength between the two, therefore, for a short while, the outcome of the battle between them was hard to determine.

Su Luo had originally planned on escaping.

But now, she merely hid in the jungle, very carefully observing the fighting match.

Neighbors who couldn't agree would lose out to a third party, she didn't know whether she would have this good fortune.

Li Aotian was extremely sly.

In fact, considering their true strength, he was unable to compare to the natural-born spirit strength of the huge brown bear.

But his luck was good, in his hand, he had an infant brown bear. Whenever the huge bear was about to use a killing strike, he would always cleverly present the

little brown bear in front of him.

# Chapter 465 – Fleeing on the uninhabited island (6)

---

The mommy brown bear would immediately refrain from shooting at a rat, for fear of breaking vases.

Once, twice, three times...every time, this trick was played on her, the mommy brown bear immediately became furious!

One could only see her mouth all of a sudden condense out a dense, stinky, fishy-smelling, viscous liquid that was quickly sprayed towards Li Aotian's body.

When this viscous liquid was shot flying out, a touch of unease flitted across Li Aotian's scarlet eyes.

At that moment, it was too late for him to think too much. He ruthlessly threw the little foolish bear towards the mouthful of viscous liquid that the mommy brown bear had spit out.

The mommy brown bear had an aghast expression, with a huge mournful howl, its body pounced over at flying speed and pressed the little foolish bear underneath her body. That was so that it might avoid this viscous liquid that could nearly corrode everything.

That little foolish bear was completely ignorant and at a loss, its huge, whirling, clear eyes bewilderedly watched its mommy and doubtfully looked at its surroundings.

However, just at this time, Li Aotian grabbed this opportunity and shouted loudly: "Freeze over the realm of the heavens!"

In that instant, everything around immediately changed into pure white snow. Wherever the eye could see, it was a vast white color.

With the huge brown bear as the focus, one after another, sharp sword blades of ice shot towards her, as if wanting to bore a hole through her heart with ten thousand arrows.

Now, even if Su Luo wanted to run, it was already too late.

The very unfortunate thing was that her body was directly frozen to the spot, she couldn't move even a tiny bit.

The huge foolish bear was also not easy to deal with.

“Howl——” A furious, loud roar, and a flame burst out and rushed forth, spreading to all directions. Very quickly, a forest fire started.

“Crack, crack. crack——” Sound after sound of violent noise, blocks and blocks of snowy ice was melted into water droplets by the raging inferno.

Li Aotian's heart was very angry!

“Since it is like this, then I will give you something terrible to have a look at!” One could see Li Aotian's mouth mumbling something to himself, and all of a sudden, at the place where the huge bear stood.

One sharp, icy thorn after another, without warning they all burst out.

Within a range of several hundred meters, it was covered with sharp, icy thorns.

The huge foolish bear momentarily did not notice, and a hole was stabbed through its belly, blood at once rushing out wildly.

“Finished...” Su Luo's heart let out a howl of grief.

Looked like the huge foolish bear was no match for Li Aotian.

Su Luo let out a sigh of helplessness. Originally, she had planned to borrow the huge foolish bear's hand to eliminate Li Aotian, now, it seemed to be impossible.

She only hoped that the huge brown bear could wound Li Aotian a little more seriously, this way, the pressure on her while fleeing would also lessen a little.

At the present moment...taking advantage of the fact that Li Aotian was occupied, she had better run fast. How far she was able to run, then it would be that far that she would run.

At this point of time, Su Luo's frozen state had already been undone by the huge foolish bear's intense flame. One could see her quietly move backwards, withdrawing step by step. After moving away by about several hundred meters, she immediately turned and fled at high speed.

Run, run, run——

Su Luo went around in circles in the forest.

If it was not for the little divine dragon giving directions, it was very likely she could get lost while running.

Didn't know how long after did Su Luo finally stop. She steadied her breathing and drank a cup of Celestial Spirit Water to replenish the water in her body.

"Where is that important place with the traps?" Su Luo asked while drinking water.

It seemed that Li Aotian ought to win, Su Luo must plan her next step.

"Awoo, awoo, awoo——" The little divine dragon's short legs stood on Su Luo's shoulder and pointed at the mountain range not far up ahead, excitedly and straightforwardly shouting 'awoo,awoo,awoo'.

Su Luo silently calculated once, its distance was less than the time it took to burn one stick of incense, very quickly, they would get there.

She was just about to get up when suddenly, she felt a sharp pain in her head.

The little divine dragon also felt it.

The two of them looked at each other, a helpless expression was exposed in Su Luo's eyes.

In the beginning, she still believed that the huge, foolish bear would at least hinder Li Aotian for a while to allow her to make preparations, but now, it seemed the brown bear had let down her great trust.

Su Luo didn't need to think, she turned around and immediately rushed forward.

# Chapter 466 – Mountain of flames (1)

---

Li Aotian, who was chasing behind her with a malicious expression and a grim gaze, tenaciously pursued any scent of Su Luo she might have left behind.

His originally sinister face right now had bloody scars scratched by sharp claws, with the flesh flipping outwards and the wound so deep that even the bone could be seen. It would cause people who saw it to be shocked by this ghastly sight and to be scared witless.

There were also many wounds on his body. Fresh blood dyed his entire robe red, and the smell of blood was very strong.

However, seeing his speed which was as fast as a stormy wind, made it seem as if it was all external wounds, while his strength didn't seem to have suffered much.

On the contrary, there was already no silhouette of the huge, foolish bear, didn't know what its current state was.

While Li Aotian was pursuing, at the same time, he coldly crooned: "Loathsome girl, cherish well this last bit of opportunity to breathe. Very soon, you will never need to breathe again."

That huge, foolish bear had been very difficult to deal with, if it was not for the fact that it had just given birth not long ago, he absolutely could not defeat it.

A magical beast was a magical beast, even under the circumstances where its strength had been reduced, it could still fight to a draw with him. Ultimately, he was preoccupied with hunting down Su Luo, that loathsome girl, so he had no choice but to toss that little foolish bear back. Otherwise, they would still be fighting.

"Loathsome girl, see where you can run to now!" Li Aotian's expression was

cold and gloomy, with a grim laugh, a vigorous spirit force condensed under his feet in a split second.

Immediately, a brilliant ray of light burst out from under the soles of his feet, his speed was at its pinnacle, leaving behind a savage, shadowy image in the sky.

That astonishing speed swept past the forest, tightly chasing after Su Luo's back.

"Oh no!" Su Luo, by chance, turned her head around. She saw that behind her, not far away, was a savage shadow stepping on top of trees with the utmost speed, coming over and pursuing her.

Through her naked eyes, it could clearly be seen that he had almost arrived with violent speed!

Su Luo's expression changed slightly.

She knew Li Aotian was enraged and had no plans to intermingle with her again. Rather, he was prepared to directly kill her.

His patience had already arrived at the lowest point.

The little divine dragon seemed to have sensed Su Luo's deep worry, and gave two howls of 'awoo'. A white, brilliant light erupted from his body and wove towards both of Su Luo's legs.

"Sssss——" Su Luo immediately inhaled a deep breath of air.

What did she discover?

After the little divine dragon's white light was added to the soles of her feet, her speed actually increased. She visually estimated that her speed had increased by ten percent or so.

Su Luo was puzzled and looked at the little divine dragon: "What's going on?"

She sensed it was not only her speed that was amplified, even her strength had followed along to also increase by ten percent.

The little divine dragon: "Awoo, awoo, awoo——" A new ability, can increase Master's strength by ten percent!

It really was like this! Su Luo's expression was overjoyed and continued to

inquire: “Is it just by ten percent?”

The little divine dragon: “Awoo, awoo, awoo——” Every time she rose one level, he could give master an increase of another ten percent.

If it was not for the fact that they were on the road fleeing right now, Su Luo wished she could grab the little divine dragon and madly kiss him a few times.

This reward was simply too wonderful.

When she was at the fourth rank, her strength could be increased by ten percent, when she was fifth rank, then it would be amplified by twenty percent, when she was sixth rank it would be thirty percent....and so on, she was simply blessed.

However, it’s a pity her strength was too weak right now, even if it was increased by another ten percent, it still didn’t have much use.

All of a sudden, Su Luo felt danger getting closer.

Just at this moment, she exploited the ten percent increase in speed under her feet, and released the spirit dance steps, once again displaying this marvelous technique.

In a flash, her body leaned to the left at a strange angle and slid a far distance away.

Her speed was astonishing and also left behind a remnant shadow.

“Pa——”

Just at this time Su Luo’s figure slid away, a huge palm strike heavily landed at the place Su Luo was a moment ago!

## Chapter 467 – Mountain of flames (2)

---

Momentarily, the air rolled out in waves and the atmosphere seemed to boil over. The ancient trees in the surrounding circle was uprooted all at once and shaken into pieces.

A deep hole in the shape of a palm that was enough to bury a person in remained behind.

Su Luo watched with lingering fear at that deep hole with dust flying upwards around it. She then turned her body and changed directions to rush forward with great speed.

Just a moment ago, if it was not for the little divine dragon increasing her speed by ten percent, perhaps she would have been directly slapped dizzy into that deep hole by Li Aotian's palm strike.

"Damn it!" Li Aotian's palm strike did not hit the target, a raging flame was ignited in his eyes.

He had calculated everything perfectly.

The loathsome girl's speed had already soared to its maximum, he had already taken into consideration her speed and direction she was fleeing to. Once this palm strike went down, it could directly bury her alive.

But, who would have known that her speed would suddenly increase at the last minute, causing his calculations to fail in the end?

A savage and malicious sneer appeared on Li Aotian's face: "Good, can avoid the first time, let's see if you have the ability to avoid it a second time!"

The first strike did not hit, Li Aotian basically had no plans to give up.

His figure launched in a flash, the toes of his feet occasionally tapping the top of the trees to borrow strength, the air had bursts of his remnant images,

making a person faint from blurred vision.

He chipped away at the distance to Su Luo's back during the chase. When he saw Su Luo's silhouette again, the corner of his mouth hooked into a grim smile.

“Boom——” Another palm strike was slapped towards Su Luo's back!

Su Luo could feel the danger from the approaching attack, she instinctively wanted to flee, but what made her despair was—— That palm strike seemed to be stuck to her back, no matter how she tried to shake it off, she couldn't avoid it. Finally, she could only watch that huge shadow violently hit her back!

Its approaching strength was so severe as to be terrifying.

“Pfft——” Su Luo could only feel a piercing pain that hurt dearly coming from her back, spreading and bursting through her four limbs and hundreds of bones.

She couldn't suppress it, a mouthful of blood wildly sprayed out.

With one hand pinching that jade piece and another hand covering her chest, her footsteps fled forward non-stop.

This jade piece was a gift presented to her by the little divine dragon's old man, it was an introduction to the great dimensional imprint's martial arts.

Altogether, there were three layers, it's a pity she had only cultivated the first layer right now.

Using it now, it was true she could kill Li Aotian, but in the future, she could never hope to advance a step forward with her great dimensional imprint.

Unless it was at the last moment, Su Luo was still unwilling to part with this jade piece.

“Boom——” Another bold and powerful palm strike attacked towards Su Luo's back.

“Pfft——” Another mouthful of blood burst forth from Su Luo; her chest was covered with blood.

Su Luo still ran as before, always running.

Even though her figure was already swaying and rocking, crooked to the east then falling to the west, yet she never had any intention to stop.

Su Luo did not take note of the fact that the fiery red stone she had concealed in her chest pocket was continuously absorbing the blood Su Luo sprayed out.

The originally fiery red stone had slowly transformed and changed into a snow-white color like suet jade, it could be seen that it was clear and transparent.

However, Su Luo was now occupied with fleeing. She basically had no time to take notice of this difference.

The corner of Li Aotian's mouth hooked into a cold, detached and cruel smile as he pursued behind Su Luo.

“Very amusing, it really is too fun of a game.” Li Aotian repeatedly sneered: “Loathsome girl, to exterminate you in one move, with regards to before, is simply too much of a blessing for you. Since you want to run, then just run!”

A cat chasing a mouse would not grab it all at once. It would unceasingly tease the mouse, after having played enough, then it would catch the mouse.

Li Aotian, at this moment, also had this kind of plan.

The palm strikes he attacked Su Luo with only had thirty percent of his strength, this was why Su Luo would vomit blood time and time again while still having not yet lost her life.

## Chapter 468 – Mountain of flames (3)

---

If he was to attack with all of his strength, considering his strike style as a seventh rank expert, very likely, after one move, Su Luo's entire person would become a meat patty.

The pitiful Li Aotian, he eternally wouldn't understand what was called nip the problem at the bud, and would instead suffer harm.

At this point of time, he was toying with Su Luo, dallying with her who was under his complete control. Very soon, he would understand what was called regret.

Li Aotian slapped another attack towards Su Luo's back.

Su Luo felt that her vertebrae on her back was about to be misaligned. She sprayed out another mouthful of blood, her footsteps stumbled and she almost kneeled on the spot.

Presently, Su Luo's speed had already become very slow, her body was tottering on the verge of collapse. Her feet moved with great difficulty and her eyesight was blurry and hazy. She could only preserve a little consciousness, as if in the next second, she would lose consciousness and fall to the ground.

Mentally, she realized that Li Aotian was toying with her, he wanted to slap her to death like cooking a frog in warm water.

And this was her only chance to escape with her life.

Li Aotian basically did not know that not far ahead were dangerous grounds that would give her a lifeline. If he knew, very likely, he would use a killing move on the spot.

Su Luo dragged her heavy steps. Even receiving the strikes time and time again, she still moved forward with great difficulty, moving forward.

Her hand tightly clenched that jade piece.

No, no, still hadn't arrived at the last minute, she must continue to persevere!

The road to being an expert was covered with thorns. She received such small injuries and she would take out her hidden trump card?

No, she could still hold on.

Su Luo swayed, her sweat was mixed with the blood on her face as she resolutely shook her head.

The little divine dragon had already been placed back into her space earlier, otherwise, with his protectiveness towards his master, he would definitely shield her.

Because Su Luo understood, she could not allow more meaningless casualties.

“Awoo, awoo, awoo— —!” In her space, the little divine dragon stood up on both hind legs, nervously leaning on the wall in her space, excitedly slapping the wall.

Had they arrived at last?

Su Luo's complexion was wan and weak. She wiped away the blood at the corner of her mouth as it lifted slightly into a clear smiling expression.

Looks like, this time, Li Aotian would regret it again.

Up ahead, a valley of flames appeared.

She could not see the end to this valley, it seemed endless, and just that abruptly appearing in front of Su Luo.

In its surroundings, all around was an air of miasma, a blackish area, surging with confusing, pitch-black smoke, and the air was terrifyingly, roasting hot to breathe.

If this uninhabited island still had signs of human habitation, the other side would definitely advise Su Luo against this place.

This valley of flames was the most dangerous place on this isolated island, even an eighth ranked expert wouldn't enter it casually.

Nobody knew how strong this valley of flames was, or how wide. One only

knew that the inside was very dangerous, the people who entered never came out again.

In its surroundings, besides the blackish miasma of gas, there was still another fervent, fiery, roasting heat. A broiling flaming heat that could roast a person dry.

Behind her, Li Aotian once again sent a palm attack sweeping towards her.

This time, Su Luo didn't use any defense and loosened her entire body.

When that powerful palm wind strike got closer, Su Luo's body borrowed the wind power under the control of this palm strike and flew up, light as a feather. She was tossed forward by the impact from the strength of this palm strike— — Only, in the effort of the blink of an eye, Su Luo's figure now vanished into the pitch-black valley of flames.

Li Aotian saw Su Luo's trace being lost in a flash, and he couldn't help but be greatly startled. His pair of eyes rigidly stared at that pitch-black valley of flames.

“Loathsome girl!!!” Li Aotian shouted and snarled, finally, he firmly slapped his own head!

He was truly an idiot!!!

Why was it that he always couldn't remember the lesson from before?

Every time, he would say to himself, it would be good to directly kill her. It would be pretty good to directly smash her into meat patty, but every time— —

## Chapter 469 – Mountain of flames (4)

---

Every time, he always wanted to torment her, ruthlessly torment her.

But, every time, just like this, he would let this loathsome girl to escape!

Li Aotian was so infuriated his face was flushed and again, it turned ashen in a moment. He wished he could slap dead his own pig brain in one move.

In front of him, clearly, this was the valley of flames.

He had an ice attribute, fire and ice engender and mutually subdue each other. It would take a longer time to eliminate the other.

If the flames in this valley of flames were inferior to his ice, then he would occupy the absolute advantage. And so, the entire valley of flames would be no effort at all with regards to him.

But, it was very unfortunate. The intensity of the flames in this valley of flames were extremely strong, far exceeding his strength in comparison. If he was to go in, very quickly, he would be swallowed by the tongues of flames.

Even so, making Li Aotian sit here and wait for death, he absolutely was unlikely to do so.

Li Aotian gave a cold snort and condensed his spirit strength around his entire body. Very quickly, a white layer of frost appeared at his side, separating him from the surrounding atmosphere.

“Charge!” Li Aotian gave an enormous shout. A powerful force was sent to his feet, his body was like a spring charging into the hole. His speed was so fast, he only left a faint afterimage behind.

Speaking of Su Luo.

She was slapped by Li Aotian’s palm strike into the valley of flames, and was

only able to crawl up after a long time.

Looking from the outside, the entire valley felt blackish, everywhere, there was the swirl of fireworks.

After truly ending up inside was Su Luo able to personally experience this.

The entire valley was encircled in all directions by mountain peaks. In every direction was areas of brilliant red mountain ranges.

These were areas of the valley of flames, resplendent, glorious red volcanos extended non-stop to the sky, seeming to be on the border of the glowing sunset. As it was the same color, it was difficult to distinguish where the glowing sunset ended and where the fiery flames began.

Observing while standing on the outside, maybe you would feel this was extremely beautiful, something to feast one's eyes upon.

Standing within the valley of the flames, personally experiencing it, only then could you perceive the terrifying ferocity of the valley of flames.

Fortunately, Su Luo's body contained the fire attribute, with everything regarding fire, she naturally had an affinity to it. Therefore, even though the temperature of the fire was very high, but it was still within a bearable range for her.

"Li Aotian, if you have the ability, then come in chasing after me!" Su Luo covered the tightening pain in her chest as the corner of her mouth hooked into a sneer.

The fire attribute against ice, the water attribute naturally had the strength to control it.

Within this valley of flames, Li Aotian's ice attribute strength would be substantially restricted. His strength would be greatly reduced.

Su Luo didn't stay too long at the entrance to the valley of flames. On the contrary, she continued to go deeper inside.

She believed that according to Li Aotian's stupid self-confidence, he absolutely would not idly wait for opportunities. He would still be in a hurry to jump in to pursue her.

Therefore, she must draw the opponent into the depths of the valley of flames.

This was because the deeper you went, the higher the temperature of the flames on the ground would be.

Didn't know for how long she had walked, Su Luo could feel that the temperature here, very soon, would already exceed the limit of what she could withstand.

She stopped just now, laboriously leaning against a rock, gasping for breath.

Soon afterwards, she took out a handful of Spirit Restoration Pills from her space, These intermediate efficiency level Spirit Restoration Pills, outside, were worth thousands of gold, whereas she was stuffing it into her mouth one by one, like chewing on balls of candy, simply too extravagant.

All of a sudden, Su Luo felt a difference at her chest. She felt around with her hand and discovered that she, in a moment of desperation, actually hadn't put that fiery red stone into her space. Rather, in passing, she had tucked it into her chest pocket.

Under that kind of situation surrounded by perils, unexpectedly, she hadn't lost it, her luck really was too good.

Su Luo took out that piece of fiery red stone.

However, when she had felt around for that piece of stone, she sensed something was wrong.

Originally, a rough stone that was heated to a roasting temperature, why was it that it felt warm and cool to the touch?

Su Luo's heart was very curious, immediately, she took it out, determined to have a look. She couldn't help but to be greatly shocked.

## Chapter 470 – Mountain of flames (5)

---

The originally vivid, fiery, flame-colored stone now was like a gentle suet jade. It gave off the white shining lustre of gems, clear and transparent, seeming as though it could reflect a person's image.

What was going on? Suddenly, Su Luo was extremely puzzled.

Just when Su Luo was still puzzled despite much thought, behind her came the light sounds of footsteps.

Su Luo was immediately alarmed. Tossing this stone into her space, she changed directions and immediately hid behind a huge boulder.

Su Luo curbed her breathing, not allowing herself to produce even a trace of sound.

Very quickly, at where Su Luo was standing just now, a person's shadow appeared.

One could see that his entire body was wrapped in frost, his whole body was a shining white, penetrating through with traces of cool air.

However, the surrounding air temperature was too blistering hot, to the extent that he needed to release spirit force to maintain the frost covering, so as to lower the temperature around his body.

Li Aotian! He actually chased her all the way into the valley of flames.

The corner of Su Luo's mouth hooked into an icy, sly smile.

Sure enough, not outside of her expectations, Li Aotian didn't wait outside idly for opportunities, rather, he rushed in to chase after and kill her.

Good, very good!

Now, Li Aotian's eyebrows were knotted tightly.

Just now, he could still sense the loathsome girl's breath, why did it all of a sudden vanish?

Li Aotian condensed the spirit power to his ears, suddenly, his right ear trembled slightly.

Immediately, Li Aotian's body spread open like a legendary large bird, similar to an eagle swooping down, he abruptly rushed towards Su Luo's location!

“Loathsome girl! Accept death!”

In order to kill this loathsome girl, he was toyed with time and time again, he was simply battered and exhausted. Just recalling what had happened so far, Li Aotian's heart immediately boiled with a strong killing intent that was hard to describe with words.

But this time, seeing he was about to use a killing move, unexpectedly, Su Luo hadn't escaped!

The corner of Li Aotian's mouth hooked into an ice-cold sneer, his palm strike whistled by, carrying with it threads of frost.

Su Luo's eyes had a cold and ridiculing meaning, one could only see both her hands form a seal and lots of medium-sized fireballs gathered around her body.

This place was the mountain of flames.

With regards to Su Luo, it was like a fish in water, or a bird in trees.

With regards to Li Aotian, it was like a dragon trapped in a sandbar or a tiger leaving behind the flat lands.

There was a limitless supply of fire in the surrounding, Su Luo effortlessly condensed out a countless number of flames. One could only hear a boom sound of explosion——”

A countless number of earth-shattering fireballs madly rushed forth towards Li Aotian's whole body. It was like a tide surging up towards the sky.

Only now did Li Aotian find out that Su Luo, this loathsome girl, actually had the fire attribute.

He was gnashing his teeth in regret!

It was no wonder that this loathsome girl dared to plunge into the valley of flames. It was not surprising that she dared to entice the enemy deeper into this valley, as it turned out, she was a fire system mage!

Li Aotian momentarily did not investigate, and was toyed with by Su Luo until he was flustered.

However, the difference in strength between both sides was too great. Very quickly, Li Aotian was able to calm down and wasn't like before, where he was kicking out in a state of confusion.

“Loathsome girl! You dare to resist! Courting death——” Li Aotian was so infuriated that his complexion was flushed!

One after another, ice blades that were so densely packed together and so numerous as to be uncountable, were like ten thousand arrows, madly rushing to bore a hole in Su Luo's heart!

Li Aotian did not believe this finishing blow that only a seventh rank could comprehend could still be withstood by this loathsome girl!

Su Luo saw the countless number of ice blades attacking towards her body, a vigilant expression flashing through her eyes. At the same time, one could only see her roll very quickly into the pile of flames on the side.

“Sizzle,sssss——” The countless number of ice blades shot into the pile of flames and was covered by the high temperature of the flames. Immediately, they were turned into vapor.

Li Aotian, seeing this, at once became so furious that his eyes turned red!

Just when all of his attention was focused on Su Luo's body, suddenly, a white-colored little puppy appeared behind him.

It seemed as if, all of a sudden, he had dropped from the sky!

## Chapter 471 – Mountain of flames (6)

Quickly, he opened up his little mouth and a huge fireball immediately shot out from his mouth and smashed heavily towards Li Aotian's head!

The fire attribute was only one of the many attributes that the little divine dragon had.

Moreover, as a proud member of the dragon race, his body's fire attribute was a lot more superior when compared to the human race's fire attribute.

This mouthful of dragon's breath puffed out a third type of true fire. It was one that Su Luo would need to cultivate with great effort unceasingly to attain while the little divine dragon's fire attribute at birth was already naturally the third type of true fire. As long as he wanted to use it, it would be all right.

This was also one of the countless times that Su Luo admired and envied the little divine dragon's gift as a member of the dragon race. The dragon race was truly mother earth's favorite darlings.

The huge fireball which contained a trace of the third type of true fire, abruptly smashed towards Li Aotian's head.

All of Li Aotian's attention was placed on Su Luo's body, momentarily, he didn't check until he sensed an approaching danger. He then subconsciously tried to dodge the danger while falling down towards the right side.

That huge dangerous fireball swept by his left shoulder.

It deserved to be called the third kind of true fire of the dragon race, Li Aotian's left shoulder had been swept a little by it, and the frost in that area was thawed in a flash. It also left behind a subtle scar in that spot on his left shoulder.

His defense was actually damaged?!

Moreover, his defense was broken by a puppy that could spit out a fireball?!

Li Aotian stared with wide eyes at that little puppy jumping around among the forest of rocks, betraying an unimaginably incredulous expression.

This little puppy in front of his eyes was definitely an unusual object.

The fireball's killing power that it puffed out, compared to all the fire system experts he fought before, was much more formidable.

Li Aotian reacted instantly without taking time to think, he pushed using both legs and jumped up. Both of his palms at the same time released an inexhaustible force that was awe-inspiring, energetic and also very threatening.

Li Aotian finally saw things clearly, in this valley of flames, his ice attribute was very seriously suppressed. Even though he could use it with great difficulty, its strength was also decreased tremendously.

The little divine dragon let out a sharp, long howl, one could only see him spring left and right on top of the rocks, jumping about nimbly and changing directions non-stop. Li Aotian stared distractedly with powerful palms, completely lacking a way to catch him.

Li Aotian was teased by the little divine dragon until he nearly directly wailed out loud.

Now, Su Luo had already climbed out of the pile of flames, with her head and face covered in grime.

Fortunately, when she rolled in, she had used the power from her wood system to wrap up her entire body. In addition, with her own body's fire attribute, therefore, she only suffered minor wounds.

Su Luo noiselessly appeared at Li Aotian's back.

The corner of her mouth was evoked into a cold smile.

Suddenly, one could only see a huge dimensional handprint hovering over Li Aotian's head, similar to a huge towering rock.

"Smash——" Su Luo shouted.

Simultaneously, the huge dimensional handprint ruthlessly smashed down upon Li Aotian's head.

Li Aotian, right now, was busy attacking the little divine dragon who had a speed that was fast and was nimble to a strange extent. Wherefore would he have time to attend to Su Luo, even more so when he had never felt that Su Luo's strength was worth paying any attention to.

The huge dimensional handprint smashed down from the sky.

It was too late for Li Aotian to avoid, one could only hear the echo of a heavy 'thump' sound, as the huge dimensional handprint ruthlessly smashed on top of Li Aotian's head.

It was a pity Su Luo's strength differed too much from Li Aotian's strength, therefore, the huge dimensional handprint essentially didn't do much harm to Li Aotian.

Only the piece of frost on top of Li Aotian's head was ruthlessly shattered by Su Luo.

Without the protection of the frost over his body, the heat swept in all at once.

Li Aotian was infuriated until his complexion was ashen.

He turned around and once again placed all his attention on Su Luo's body.

First, he decided to let that little puppy off for now and focus all his strength on getting rid of Su Luo, this flea.

Unexpectedly, he had just turned around to deal with Su Luo when the little divine dragon that was concealed in the small cracks among the rocks, appeared, leaping out in an impressive and lively manner.

## Chapter 472 – Mountain of flames (7)

---

How great was the rapport and agreement between the little divine dragon and Su Luo?

Without waiting for Su Luo to explain, he jumped really high and sprayed out a mouthful of dragon's breath towards Li Aotian's head.

The dragon's breath contained the strange third kind of true fire. Whatever the fire encountered, it could burn, not leaving even dust behind. What kind of formidable power was that?

Although Li Aotian once again condensed frost to use to protect his head, however, without waiting for him to finish condensing the frost, the little divine dragon had already puffed out a dragon's breath.

Once this mouthful of dragon's breath descended, the protective layer of frost above Li Aotian's head was immediately blasted into fine powder. At the same time, his hair was also set on fire by the blast.

"Ah—!!!" A loud, ghostly and miserable howl was produced by Li Aotian's mouth, as he used a strong frost to smashed towards his own head.

But, how could the third kind of true fire be so easy to extinguish?

With regards to the third kind of true fire time and time again crossing swords with the protective frost, when Li Aotian's hair was almost burned with practically nothing left, only then was Li Aotian finally able to extinguish the fire on his hair.

Although it seemed like a long time, however, it only happened in the blink of an eye.

Li Aotina was so infuriated he wailed like a child.

The him right now cut such a sorry figure, like an old demon from the fields at

the bottom of a mountain cliff.

His hair was burned until nothing was left, with a face filled with uneven pot-holes. He was also missing an eye, the clothing on his body was bloodstained, damaged and tattered. Even the most dejected beggar looked better than him.

One in front and another in the back, Su Luo and the little divine dragon attacked from both the front and rear side. Both of them were experts at mounting high speed sneak attacks. As a result, Li Aotian at this point of time was simply weary from dealing with this.

However, Li Aotian had already decided that no matter how the little puppy sneak attacked him, as long as he first killed Su Luo, this loathsome girl, then it would be fine.

Now, both of Su Luo's eyes were closed tightly. One by one, she formed hand seals with her hands, and the temperature surrounding Li Aotian suddenly rose.

“Loathsome girl, you think this way, you can win against me? Dream on!” Li Aotian angrily shouted out loud.

“If you have the ability, then bring it on, why waste words.” The corner of Su Luo's mouth lifted into a ridiculing smiling expression.

Li Aotian had a gloomy expression. Suddenly, his arm extended as his fingers changed into steel reinforced sharp claws. When he brandished it about, it was so strong as if it could rip apart the atmosphere.

It issued “Sssss,ssss,sss— —” acute noises.

Su Luo's heart trembled with cold.

Li Aotian was worthy of being called the Jade Lake Palace's second young master. Sure enough, when pressured to the bottom line, he indeed had lots of treasures.

Su Luo's wrist shook slightly, and a huge dimensional handprint slapped towards Li Aotian's pair of sharp claws.

The corner of Li Aotian's mouth hooked into a taunting sneer: “You overestimate your abilities!”

With one wave of his hand, immediately after, he ripped Su Luo's huge

dimensional handprints into pieces.

Afterwards, his pair of sharp claws, lacking any compassion, swept towards Su Luo's face!

Su Luo did not avoid or dodge it, she merely stood there, coldly smiling at him.

Li Aotian's heart thus shivered with cold, he still wasn't clear what had just happened, when suddenly, he felt his calf hurting!

He lowered his head to look, and discovered that that white-colored little puppy he had long ago lost track of actually had taken a bit out of the flesh on his calf!

It was not a small piece, but rather, it was a wound as large as a bowl-sized mouthful!

A kind of acute pain passed through, and Li Aotian only felt a burst of dizziness in his head.

Li Aotian's sharp claws did not slap towards Su Luo, rather, it turned to attack the little puppy hanging from his calf!

This little bastard was simply too hateful, repeatedly spoiling his important events, if it was not for his destructive interference time and time again, the loathsome girl would have been smashed into a meat patty by him long ago.

One could only see Li Aotian slap his palms towards his own calf without the least bit of mercy, just like a person would ordinarily slap at a mosquito.

But, it was a pity that Li Aotian's IQ was clearly destroyed by his fury, he completely underestimated the little puppy's speed.

Just at the time when that sharp claw slapped down——

## Chapter 473 – Mountain of flames (8)

---

One could only see the little divine dragon's quick movement, even grabbing onto the sharp claw, all at once, he rolled into Li Aotian's trouser leg!

The pitiful Li Aotian, with his palm, slapped down and heavily landed a blow on the wound that had a huge piece of flesh bitten off. Immediately, he started to bare his fangs in pain, the veins on his forehead exploded out, even tears almost burst out.

The hateful little divine dragon nimbly, like a divine light, bored around in his trouser leg. Li Aotian was flustered, he simply did not know what would be best to do with him. He was so anxious that he yelled loudly while running around in circles.

This little divine dragon, this little thing, he could have crawled anywhere, but against all reason, his head bore into Li Aotian's crotch area, a paw swiping down — “Hiss—” The pain that suddenly arrived made the rim of Li Aotian's eyes fill with tears.

“Go die, go die!!!” Li Aotian was so angry, he sent a palm strike towards that area on his own body.

However, in view of that mistake from before, this time, the extent of his movements wasn't very big. Also, as a result of this, he was able to preserve the root for future offspring.

A derisive smile flashed through Su Luo's eyes.

Such a good opportunity, if she was not to use it, then she could indeed be called foolish.

Su Luo took out that deeply cold dagger from her sleeves and noiselessly approached Li Aotian's back.

No sooner said than done.

The dagger in Su Luo's hand flashed by like a white light and slid towards Li Aotian's throat.

If it was an ordinary person, naturally, a line of blood would appear, and afterwards, he would die with eyes open, falling to the ground.

But it was Li Aotian— —

Su Luo didn't expect that his defence would be so formidably strong.

The little divine dragon could break his protection, but her dagger was unable to do so.

When she was behind him slitting his throat, she could feel that very hard layer, no matter how great the strength she used, she could not slice through it!

She didn't expect that the solidness of Li Aotian's physical body had reached this degree.

Her slash did not enter, Su Luo hurriedly retreated backwards.

However now, it was somewhat late.

At this moment, Li Aotian had already been driven nearly insane by one person and one beast.

Now, why should he even care about hiding any trump cards?

One could only see Li Aotian smile coldly. Suddenly, he raised his sleeves, and a thick, greenish black vine shot out from his sleeves, attacking abruptly towards Su Luo's body.

Too obscure! Li Aotian, besides being an ice system, he actually was still a wood system mage, before, she had never heard this from anyone.

Su Luo turned around and immediately ran, in according to the S shape curve, she rapidly withdrew.

Li Aotian's ice system was restricted by the valley of flames, however, in comparison, the restriction to his wood system was much less.

This thick, greenish black vine seemed to have grown eyes, tightly nipping behind Su Luo, not letting go. Moreover, its speed was so fast as to be

astonishing.

Before, Su Luo was slapped almost unconscious by Li Aotian, with all her five viscera and six bowels receiving serious wounds, and her strength had suffered a great disturbance.

She staggered along while running, but without running more than a few steps in front of her, a huge rock appeared. Just when she wanted to take a detour, that thick, greenish black vine had already arrived to attack.

“Pow—” The thick, greenish black vein thrashed heavily towards Su Luo’s back, immediately striking Su Luo, causing her to tumble down to the ground.

Without waiting for her to crawl back up, that thick, greenish black vine had already swept Su Luo up, binding her entire body.

From head to toe, neatly bundled together, hanging high up from the tree by the vine, floating and being freely pushed around by the wind.

This image was very similar to the traitorous opposition hanging on top of the city wall...Su Luo simply wanted to cry but lacked the tears, extremely helpless.

The little divine dragon, seeing his own little master being hung like this, just like a person being supported up waiting to be roasted dry, was immediately unhappy.

One could only see him loudly roar and snarl ‘awoo, awoo’ at Li Aotian, jumping from in front of him to his back. All of a sudden, he squeezed into his back and bit down ruthlessly on his buttocks— “Pooh—” The little divine dragon disdainfully spit out that piece of fresh flesh from his mouth.

# Chapter 474 – A matter of life and death (1)

---

Li Aotian was simply about to be driven mad from fury by this smelly puppy.

He covered his butt, it was so painful that tears nearly ran down. This puppy was even disdainful of his flesh, didn't it make a mistake?!

This little puppy hopped and jumped around on his body, jubilantly creating a disturbance, and it was also nimble with lots of lively changes. Its speed was surprisingly fast, Li Aotian was honestly helpless for lack of a better option. He simply had no way to deal with this little puppy.

As a result, Li Aotian turned around to deal with Su Luo again.

Now, in front of Su Luo, was a cave of flames.

The entrance to the cave was wide open.

Inside, a raging inferno was burning, its burning heat directly hit her face like an endless ocean of flames. The flames inside, didn't know how many times stronger it was compared to the ones outside.

Li Aotian controlled that thick, greenish black vine and directly tossed Su Luo, who was bundled up like a Zongzi (1), into the cave.

Such fervent hot flames, practically giving a person a painful burning sensation like that of the skin being peeled from the flesh.

Without even going in, Su Luo was already roasted until she was dizzy with blurred vision. If she was tossed in, then wouldn't it be too much?

Just at this most thrilling second——

The little divine dragon sprang up and leaped toward her, seeing that he was already too late, a bright idea suddenly occurred to the little divine dragon. His two little paws hung onto the greenish black vine, and his sharp white teeth bit

down ruthlessly into the greenish black vine.

One could only hear a clear snapping sound, as the thick, greenish black vine actually snapped into two in response under that little mouth.

Su Luo, who was barely an arm's distance away from the cave, suddenly fell to the ground and again escaped a calamity.

Su Luo patted her chest with some lingering fear.

Fortunately, the little divine dragon had a bright idea, otherwise she would have been tossed into the cave of flames and burned into traces of light smoke, flying away.

Li Aotian saw that Su Luo was saved once again, and his own effort had fallen short once again. He was so furious that his complexion became flushed and the veins on his hands burst out violently.

“Loathsome girl! Watch this move!” The first time didn't work, Li Aotian again used the greenish black vine a second time, trying to bind Su Luo.

However, a matter that astonished him occurred.

He discovered a little thing hanging at the end of the greenish black vine. After a closer look, he saw that it was actually that little puppy who kept ruining his plans time and time again!

One could see his two little paws firmly clamping down on that greenish black vine, his little mouth continuously nibbling on it, gobbling it up. The greenish black vine that he had spent so many years nurturing to this length was actually consumed by his little mouth, inch by inch.

In the end, what is this organism? Would a normal dog eat plants? Li Aotian felt both temples on his forehead pulse and violently jump out. His head simply ached too painfully.

At the moment, he also didn't want to bind Su Luo, and directly urged the greenish black vine to move, trying to bind the little puppy.

Such a small target, if he was to bind it, then couldn't he directly pinch it to death?

But Li Aotian's mistake was that his brain was muddled from anger.

Since the little divine dragon could bite the greenish black vine into pieces, then how could he be bound by it?

Indeed, in the beginning, the little divine dragon was bound like a Zongzi. But very quickly, a hole appeared in the area near his mouth, moreover, this hole became increasingly bigger, increasingly bigger...Finally, the little divine dragon easily came out from inside it.

Li Aotain, with a dumbstruck expression, stared at the little puppy that came out from the vine, and immediately, he slapped his own head, speechlessly looking to the sky.

This pig brain of his simply was a pig head!

He was resigned, really resigned to this fate.

This little puppy was really not an ordinary dog, it was simply more frightening than the dragon race. He conceded that he couldn't deal with it.

Li Aotian originally thought he could very quickly slap Su Luo to death, but after experiencing setbacks again and again, it made him realize the current situation.

He had already stayed inside for too long. If he stayed longer like this, his spirit power would very quickly be exhausted. Thus, he must kill the loathsome girl within the shortest amount of time!

*1) Zongzi – is a mixture of sticky rice wrapped in bamboo, reed or other flat leaves. The area where I'm from uses a sweet mixture of sticky rice with Jujube otherwise known as the Chinese red dates. In southern parts of China the stuffing mixture is more salty using meats and other protein. I remember growing up it was only eaten during special occasions, now I can find it anytime in Flushing Queens NYC [Wiki article link](#)*

## Chapter 475 – A matter of life and death (2)

---

Li Aotian once again turned his attention to focus on dealing with Su Luo.

No one knew when a layer of snowflakes appeared in his hand. The six pointed corners of the snowflakes were as sharp as daggers, glittering like frost and snow, all arriving to attack Su Luo.

Before, Su Luo had dropped down from a high place, again, it jolted her wounded five viscera and six bowels, triggering the pain from before. Now, she was sitting on the ground leaning on the rock to rest, even if she wanted to move a step, it would be seriously challenging.

Seeing the hexagon-shaped snowflakes approaching closer, Su Luo got up with great difficulty and like a carp, she rolled behind a rock. This hot boiling rock served as her shield.

However, before Su Luo could stand firm, she saw that half-broken, greenish black vine directly wrap up the rock in front of Su Luo, casting it aside.

Su Luo was immediately revealed and was underneath those countless number of snowflakes hidden weapons.

The little divine dragon had already leaped up, blocking in front of Su Luo.

Now, he was whirling around Su Luo with her in the center, continuously spraying out mouthfuls of dragon's breath that was boiling hot—

“Pitter-patter—” Dragon's breath flowed continuously, the snowflakes were already restrained by the formidable power of the valley of flames, and having been sprayed by the little divine dragon's dragon breath, its might was again greatly decreased. Even though it shot towards Su Luo's body, it also turned merely into a tickle.

“Li Aotian, as it turns out, your seventh rank was merely like this.” The corner

of Su Luo's mouth hooked into a taunting sneer, her thin eyebrows poked up slightly, with a smile that was not quite a smile, she looked at Li Aotian.

A trace of a shady, malicious and pungent radiance flashed through Li Aotian's eyes, and one could only see him burst into loud laughter: "It is merely like this? Hahaha, loathsome girl, then let me show you what is called merely like this! Accept death!"

Abruptly, the ground where Su Luo stood, in a split second, sprouted numerous ice thorns. Su Luo suddenly jumped up.

But, just at this time——

"Kaboom——" An acute sound of the sky splitting could be heard.

Su Luo turned her eyes to look, a startled and alarmed thought actually flashed through them.

One could only see that originally thick, greenish black vine, in a split second, grow by more than tenfold. It was ten times as thick and solid, with its strength also increasing by the same amount.

What was going on? In the end, what did Li Aotian do? How could this greenish black vine suddenly grow abruptly by tenfold?

However, there was already no time for Su Luo to think much more.

On Su Luo's right side was that cave of flames, and this greenish black vine which was aggressively murderous-looking was starting at the left and moving to the right. It swept past like it was about to totally annihilate everything.

"Thump——"

One could only hear the noise of a hit.

Su Luo's body was rolled up and lifted high and made a parabolic arc in the air. She was smashed far into the cave of flames.

"Awoo, awoo, awoo——" A mournful howl of grief came from the little divine dragon's mouth. One could only see his body jump up, following closely after Su Luo's body and together, they landed deep into the cave of flames.

No matter how much danger was ahead, regardless of whether it was life or

death, he would always chose to face it together with his little master.

“Hahahahaha——” Seeing Su Luo falling into the cave of flames, Li Aotian was unable to suppress it anymore. With both hands at his hips, he started to laugh ‘haha’ wildly.

I have taken revenge, I have been avenged!

He finally put this loathsome girl to death.

He recalled how he had pursued her all the way here, how many hardships he had suffered, how difficult this task was. Also, how many times he was tricked into a difficult situation...all the past events were vivid in his mind, simply extremely unbearable to recollect.

But now, everything was good, the greatest trouble in his heart and belly was finally eliminated. The loathsome girl had died at last!

Even if she had the fire attribute, so what? Inside the cave of flames, the temperature was absolutely something her, as a little third rank, could not bear.

As long as he thought of this loathsome girl now being burned into black coke, Li Aotian would beam with joy, he was more excited then obtaining any kind of treasure.

All of a sudden, a slight fluctuation came through the air.

Very quickly, a dark shadow appeared.

Nangong Liuyun came flying over.

## Chapter 476 – A matter of life and death (3)

---

His current expression was grave, stern and indifferent, with both eyes glaring darkly at Li Aotian as if he was a dead person.

“Where is Luo girl?”

Nangong Liuyun had both hands behind his back, the depths of his eyes were as cold as a millennium old glacier, and also like ten thousand years old snow that would never melt. With only one look, it could freeze someone in place so that he was trembling in fear.

Li Aotian was stunned, looking at the Nangong Liuyun in front of him as if he almost wasn't able to recognize him.

The current Nangong Liuyun, compared to before when they met at the cave entrance, and compared to any previous time, his imposing manner was many times stronger. It was just as if his entire person's quality had broken out and transformed.

It was said that once one arrived at the fourth rank, it was a dividing line.

Rank five to seven was another dividing line.

After the eighth rank, the whole body would break out and transform, thus truly entering the list of the continent's strongest experts.

In front of Li Aotian's eye, regardless of imposing manner or expression, he gave others a feeling of being profoundly mysterious, causing them to tremble. This aura was just like his father's.

“Nangong Liuyun, you, you've reached the eighth rank?”

Because Li Aotian was too shocked, even his normally nimble speech stuttered a bit.

Nangong Liuyun indifferently swept him a glance, nodded his head slightly, and immediately asked again: “Hand over Luo girl, and I’ll spare your life.”

“That is impossible!!!” Li Aotian roared in an incredibly loud voice.

The last time he had seen Nangong Liuyun was half a year ago, and at that time, he was still at the peak of sixth rank. Just before, when they met, he had leaped to the seventh rank, and that was still acceptable.

But now, no more than a few days had passed, and he had actually advanced another rank!

Within half a year, he had consecutively jumped two ranks. Moreover, he actually rose from the sixth rank to the eighth rank, these kind of difficult levels that other people exhausted their entire lives without being able to step across, he had actually directly leaped over; how could this let other people live?

Li Aotian had originally believed that before, when he didn’t die after having been struck by the spirit pinball, but instead was promoted a level, was already considered very fortunate. But compared to Nangong, he wasn’t anything at all.

“That’s impossible! I don’t believe it, I don’t believe it!” Li Aotian hugged his head, rocking back and forth. No matter what, he still would not believe that Nangong Liuyun’s cultivation speed was this fast.

Nangong Liuyun frowned, a cloudy, baleful expression flashing through his eyes, with a threatening cold, aura, he said: “Li Aotian, reply to this king’s words!”

His Highness Prince Jin’s patience was usually shorter than the length of a fingernail, the only exception being with a certain person.

Hearing Nangong Liuyun asking this, Li Aotian immediately stared blankly, and suddenly, he started laughing wildly out loud again.

He laughed frantically and insolently, very pleased with himself: “Nangong Liuyun, you want to know the whereabouts of that loathsome girl? Ha ha ha, I will never tell you in this lifetime, go look for her yourself!”

Li Aotian’s had just finished speaking, then he turned around, wishing to leave quickly.

However, not even waiting for him to leave, Nangong Liuyun's body was already in front of Li Aotian, blocking him.

“Along this entire road, was it you who was chasing to kill her?” When Nangong Liuyun opened his eyes to find that Luo girl wasn't there, and there were traces of a fight at the cave entrance, On the spot, his heart became frenetic.

Relying on his cool-headed brain, and fine, detailed insight, he searched the entire route here. He was actually accurate to perfection in his analysis.

Li Aotian gave a cold laugh: “If it was me who was chasing to kill her, what about it? Don't tell me that she shouldn't die?”

Li Aotian pointed at his face that had been disfigured by Su Luo's spirit pinball, that human not yet human, demon, yet not a demon's appearance. Looking at that, who wouldn't feel nauseous?

“She deserves to die!” Li Aotian's neck was tough and unyielding, his eye was filled with a cruel and vicious appearance.

Nangong Liuyun looked at him unmoving, the expression on his face was as tranquil as water. Suddenly, his hands were as quick as lightning as they grabbed hold of Li Aotian's neck and lifted him up high.

In front of Nangong Liuyun, Li Aotian discovered that he had absolutely no strength to resist. He unceasingly struggled as if on his deathbed, but discovered it was to no avail.

## Chapter 477 – A matter of life and death (4)

---

Unless Nangong Liuyun wished to release him, otherwise, regardless of how he resisted, it was all in vain.

Li Aotian's heart was unreconciled!

Obviously before, when he saw Nangong Liuyun at the cave entrance, he was still at the strength of a seventh rank. At that time, if he was to fight with his life on the line, maybe he would still have the strength to resist, but now...

“Going to speak or not!” Nangong Liuyun's long arms were like iron clamps, pinching Li Aotian's throat, obstructing air from getting in.

Li Aotian, due to lack of oxygen, his complexion turned deep red. Very quickly, he violently nodded his head.

“I'll speak, but before that, you must answer a question from me!” Li Aotian was still puzzled with regards to Nangong Liuyun's advancement in levels, even after much thought.

“Speak.” Nangong Liuyun, in passing, tossed him to the ground. His gaze was ice-cold and indifferent as he glared at him.

Li Aotian, who was tossed aside as if throwing trash, covered his throat, coughing and gasping for breath repeatedly. With great difficulty, he was able to restore a somewhat calm appearance.

“If I was to fight with you at the cave entrance that time, did I have a chance to win against you?”

Li Aotian unwaveringly stared at Nangong Liuyun.

The latter indifferently glanced at him, the corner of Nangong Liuyun's mouth hooked into a hard, bloody and bitter smile: “Could it be you didn't realise at that time, this king was injured?”

“Eh???” Li Aotian looked at Nangong Liuyun in surprise.

He really was wounded? The person that was injured really was him?

Li Aotian immediately was stupefied.

It seemed that Nangong Liuyun felt that he still hadn't struck a shocking enough blow, so he unhurriedly nodded his head: “At that time, this king's life was hanging by a thread, it was not limited to you, any random person that knows martial arts could easily have put this king to death.”

Unexpectedly, it was like this...Li Aotian suddenly was flabbergasted, staring at him with a blank and foolish expression.

As it turned out, originally, he was that close to an opportunity to kill him...so easily obtained, it was a pity, all the fault of his pig head!

To actually fear and cower under Nangong Liuyun's strength from before, to the extent of not daring to suspect him, not daring to move against him.

Damn it, really damn it! Li Aotian very ruthlessly slapped himself once in the face, making himself spit out a mouthful of blood from the slap.

“Now, it's your turn to tell this king, speak, in the end, where is Luo girl?” Nangong Liuyun looked at him indifferently.

Mentioning Su Luo, that loathsome girl, all of a sudden, Li Aotian exploded out into a fit of wild laughter!

“Hahaha—hahahahaha—Nangong Liuyun, as it turns out. there is also a person you care about. So you also have a weak point!”

Li Aotian couldn't help but to start laughing wildly.

Before, he was suspicious all along about why Nangong Liuyun never chased after them, until this moment, he finally could be considered to have really realized it.

Nangong Liuyun had received a serious injury, and was simply unable to protect her.

If he didn't guess wrong, at that time, Nangong Liuyun was actually inside the cave. The loathsome girl, in order to draw him away, she had deliberately said

that Nangong Liuyun went to look for food.

Looked like this loathsome girl could be considered loyal and affectionate towards Nangong Liuyun, but now, she was already dead. Don't know what Nangong Liuyun would do after becoming aware of this news.

Li Aotian knew that today, he would not be able to escape, so he might as well throw away his life and engrave a ghost in Nangong Liuyun's heart that he would never be able to get rid off!

Thinking up to now, Li Aotian stopped his wild laughter, and cast satirizing glances at Nangong Liuyun: "A grand and stately, two meters tall real man, still needs the protection of a woman. Nangong Liuyun, you still have the face to live on this earth?"

Nangong Liuyun's expression was tranquil as he merely stared at him indifferently, phoenix eyes narrowed slightly.

Li Aotian gave a cold snort: "Su Luo, that loathsome girl, in order to protect you, alone and by herself, drew me away. Along the way, she faced mortal dangers and barely escaped with her life countless times. Whereas you, you were cultivating soundly and safely under her protection."

## Chapter 478 – A matter of life and death (5)

---

The hands at Nangong Liuyun's sides tightened slightly, his complexion condensed into frost.

Li Aotian continued to sneer: "But now, she is dead! I simply killed her! What you owe her, you will never be able to pay her back!"

A woman he was deeply in love with, and the counterpart dearly loving him back, in order to save him, she paid with her life...Nangong Liuyun, today, a seed was planted in your heart, in the future, he was not worried that it would take root and germinate! A crazy, malicious sneer flashed through Li Aotian's eye.

Nangong Liuyun, having heard what was said, his entire body immediately became motionless.

Luo girl, she...she...impossible!

Both of Nangong Liuyun's eyes were scarlet, full of bloodshot veins, his long arms, with one grab, ferociously pinched Li Aotian's neck, and he furiously roared: "You are speaking nonsense! If you continue to talk nonsense, believe it or not that this king will choke you to death! Simply choke you to death!"

Nangong Liuyun completely lost all of his rationality, with his very great strength, one could only hear the sound of coughing, and just like this, a bone in Li Aotian's neck was broken.

"Speak! In the end, where is she!"

Li Aotian tenaciously bit his mouth, refusing to yield. Nangong Liuyun was so furious that with one throw, he cast him aside, tossing him heavily to the ground.

Li Aotian's mouth hooked into a sinister smile, one could only see him use up his last strength to pull at that piece of cut off dragonstone.

Once the cut off dragonstone was dropped down, nobody would be able to turn around this hopeless situation. After going in, she would never be able to come out.

Nangong Liuyun's gaze suddenly turned cold.

Could it be that Luo Luo was inside the cave of flames?!

The so-called, even a fool after pondering thousands of time could also be right once, Li Aotian, before death's door, finally became smart for once.

He openly showed Nangong Liuyun his scheme, forcing Nangong Liuyun to make a choice.

Once the cut off dragonstone dropped, the die was cast, those that go in would never be able to come out.

However, whether Su Luo was inside or not, still alive or not, he would never tell.

He merely threw this quandary of questions back to Nangong Liuyun.

If he chose not to move, then probably he wouldn't be able to see Su Luo for the rest of his life, or perhaps her skeletal remains.

Or if he chose to rush in, then he might never come out for the rest of his life, and he would be burned to death while alive inside.

The cut off dragonstone fell with lightning speed nearly in the blink of an eye — —

Nangong Liuyun's body immediately flew up, his speed was like the attack of thunder, swift and oppressively severe, as if the space between heaven and earth were all swaying.

He ruthlessly kicked his foot towards Li Aotian's throat, and afterwards, he borrowed the power of momentum to shoot with flying speed into the cave of flames.

The cut off dragonstone had already descended to the lowest point.

One could only see Nangong Liuyun's body stuck flat to the surface of the ground like a bowling ball sliding inside.

Just at the time when he slid inside— —

“Thump— —” The cut off dragonstone smashed into the ground, producing a violent hitting sound, lifting up the countless dust particles from the ground.

Nangong Liuyun avoided the danger.

As for Su Luo.

Previously, she was slapped in by one of Li Aotian's palm strike. Su Luo's originally seriously injured body finally could not bear it anymore and she directly passed out inside the cave.

The little divine dragon tightly followed behind and like a spring, plunged inside.

Seeing Su Luo collapsed on the ground and remain unconscious, immediately, he was extremely worried. Hurriedly, he went up to rub against his little master.

Originally, this little master would always accompany him to play. This time, she just lay there motionlessly, as if she would never wake up again.

As he looked at the little Master's complexion become scarlet red, the skin on her body was about to burn, the little divine dragon's heart was extremely anxious.

His pair of monochrome, clear and limpid huge eyes was puffy and filled with tears. His eyes were very red and spun around Su Luo in circles, his little tail trembling back and forth from worry.

Very quickly, he resolutely wiped away the tears in his swollen eyes, as he puffed out a ball of white mist, sending it to envelop Su Luo's body.

The white mist contained a touch of chilliness, it was none other than frost that had yet to condense.

## Chapter 479 – A matter of life and death (6)

---

If Su Luo was awake, very likely, she would be amazed again.

Could it be that the little divine dragon also had all the elemental attributes?

Just from what he had shown, he already had the fire, water and lightning attribute, now, added to it, was the ice attribute...worthy to be called mother earth's most partial to and favorite darling. This kind of gifted talent was simply in defiance of the natural order.

But in the final analysis, the little divine dragon was merely a fifth rank and had just recently left the infant phase, his strength wasn't that strong. Also, within this cave of flames, the temperature was still somewhat threatening to him, what's even more was that he needed to divert some attention to protecting Su Luo.

Therefore, not long after, the little divine dragon was unable to hold on. He was hanging out his little pink tongue while panting for breath.

Really tired, from birth until now, he hadn't been this tired. The little divine dragon's pair of eyes was puffy and full of tears. With a pitiful and wretched expression, he went to rub against Su Luo.

Why was it that the little master still hadn't woken up? His water supply was almost depleted...

He also couldn't enter that mystical place, unable to drink the spring water to replenish his strength...What to do, what to do? The little divine dragon was so anxious that his tail shook back and forth. He ran around Su Luo in circles non-stop.

Right away, he saw his little master's skin turning scarlet red again. The little divine dragon had no other way, no matter how parched he was, he still

condensed out a trace of white, frosty mist to envelop the little master.

Just like this, while the little divine dragon was enduring the threat from the flames on the ground, at the same time, he was still puffing out the frosty air within his body to protect Su Luo. Very quickly, the originally moist-from-water, adorable little divine dragon started to wither, looking ill as he curled up into a little ball and lay on his stomach by Su Luo's side, staring at her.

What to do...the little divine dragon's consciousness was starting to become fuzzy, when suddenly, a noise came from the surroundings, as if something had fallen down.

However, very sleepy, really want to sleep...the little divine dragon gradually closed his eyes.

Speaking of Nangong Liuyun.

Like a shooting star, he flew in, his speed was so fast as to be astonishing.

He had just entered when Nangong Liuyun had a kind of bad premonition.

The temperature outside was already quite high, but the temperature inside was astonishing, it was more than ten times hotter than outside.

Now, there were boiling, raging flames all around, soaring to engulf everything, even Nangong Liuyun had a feeling of skin being peeled from flesh, let alone how Su Luo would feel.

Nangong Liuyun had a deeply worried expression, as he loudly yelled in all directions: "Luo Luo——Luo girl——Luo Luo——"

Each yell was louder than the one before, each yell was more worried than before.

If Luo girl really had fallen into the cave of flames, in such a long time, only heaven would know what could have happened...

Nangong Liuyun's fist was clenched tightly, that kind of consequences, he simply didn't even dare to think about.

All around, the flames soared to the sky, the fumes lingered on, resulting in low visibility. Nangong Liuyun shouted until his mouth and tongue were dry, yet still didn't obtain any response.

His heart was somewhat complicated.

How much he wished that Li Aotian was just scheming against him, and how he hoped that Su girl was not inside this cave of flames.

Nangong Liuyun hadn't walked out for more than a few steps, when suddenly, his foot kicked something. It had also gave a tiny 'awoo, awoo' barking sound and firmly tried to bite Nangong Liuyun's calf.

Nangong Liuyun's reaction was extremely fast, without waiting for it to bite down, he had already lifted it up.

"Little puppy?!" Nangong Liuyun's expression immediately was overjoyed. He used a lot of strength to shake the little thing: "Quick, wake up, quickly wake up, where is your master?"

This was Luo girl's spirit pet, since it was here, then Luo girl was certainly not far away.

The little divine dragon weakly half-squinted his eyes in concentration, his little paw pointed to the floor...

The pitiful little divine dragon, after Nangong Liuyun was done using him, was tossed aside, falling to the ground. The little thing miserably covered his little butt that was sore from the fall, shouting 'awoo, awoo' towards Nangong Liuyun's back, its eyes were glistening with even more tears.

Where would Nangong Liuyun still have the time to attend to it?

## Chapter 480 – A matter of life and death (7)

---

When with one glance, he saw Su Luo on the ground, his entire heart lifted up very high, and in this split second, he nearly suffocated.

“Luo Luo, Luo Luo!” Nangong Liuyun excitedly shook Su Luo, seeing that she wouldn’t wake up, Nangong Liuyun pressed both hands to her heavenly spirit acupuncture point on her head and poured a steady flow of spirit force into her body.

In a daze, Su Luo felt her own body become light as a feather, as if her soul had flown outside of her body.

She was walking inside a steel and cement-built modern city with high-rise apartment buildings everywhere. There were cars, public transportation, a tide of people forming congestions in extreme chaos.

On this cloudy road in the mountain, rose a dagger stabbing towards her chest.

“You really believed I liked you? In fact, for so many years, I was always just monitoring you.”

These bone-chilling words, that cold overcast sneer, was like a devil, repeating over and over again in her head.

So painful...heart ached, her body also ached.

All around was very hot, so hot she was about to shed a layer of skin and her breathing nearly stopped.

She felt her entire body was like being placed inside a stove, being roasted non-stop.

Suddenly, a gentle breath slowly flowed in, like a vast and deep clear spring, extending to her four limbs and hundreds of bones. It saturated the skin that

was roasted dry.

Su Luo weakly opened her eyes halfway, the image that entered her eyes was Nangong Liuyun's extremely handsome face.

"Awake? Do you have anywhere that is uncomfortable?" Su Luo opened up her throat but could not speak.

She fished out a cup of spring water from her space, slowly drank a mouthful, then Su Luo finally was considered having woken up.

When she was drinking, the little divine dragon sat in a kneeling posture in front of her. His pair of limpid eyes, full of misery, watched her with a feeling of having been aggrieved.

Su Luo immediately laughed in spite of herself, she didn't draw more water and directly picked up the little divine dragon, tossing him into her space.

This place was too hot, look at him, the fur on his body would very quickly be burnt from being roasted. He looked simply too pitiful.

Seeing Nangong Liuyun's forehead covered with a thin layer of perspiration, Su Luo fetched another cup of water and handed to him: "You should also drink."

Nangong Liuyun nodded his head, his eyes betrayed his concern: "How do you feel, still feeling any pain?"

Su Luo nodded her head, then shook her head: "For the time being, I can still bear it. I'm afraid as more time passes, I will not be able to hold on."

The temperature in here, for her, was really too high.

Nangong Liuyun nodded his head.

Inside the cave of flames, even the color of the flames had changed.

Inside the valley of flames that was the color of red clouds, it was still considered normal.

But after entering the cave of flames, the deeper you went in, the deeper the color of the flames became. It gave people a faint feeling of burning pain, as if the skin was being frayed from the flesh.

His Luo girl was okay for the time being, but her wounds were too grave, very

likely, she would not last long in this cave of flames.

Nangong Liuyun's brows knotted, constantly thinking of a way out.

Su Luo didn't know that the cut off dragonstone had already dropped, and pulled at Nangong Liuyun's sleeves, slowly saying: "We should quickly get out, now, your cultivation has already been restored, just in time to help me get back at Li Aotian who bullied me."

Humph, humph, these few days, she was chased after running all over the place, feeling like a dog that had fallen into water. She had desperately fled in all directions, now, the time had come for the reversal of the wheel of fortune, it was her turn to be tyrannical right back.

Nangong Liuyun helplessly breathed out a sigh: "If you are speaking of killing Li Aotian, actually, there is no need, because...he is already dead."

In the beginning, he pinched his neck until it broke, afterwards, borrowing the force of momentum, he had kicked him again. He was already thoroughly dead long ago.

Nangong Liuyun looked at Su Luo with tenderness, gently comforting her by stroking her soft hair: "Girl, don't be afraid, this king will definitely find a way out, to take you home, do you believe me?"

Immediately, Su Luo's heart was startled...listening to the meaning within Nangong Liuyun's words, somehow, they couldn't go out?

## Chapter 481 – A matter of life and death (8)

---

Nangong Liuyun helplessly nodded his head: “Yes, Li Aotian lowered the cut off dragonstone.”

Suddenly Su Luo was speechless, silently staring at Nangong Liuyun: “Clearly, you know what it means for the cut off dragonstone to fall, and you still came in?”

Nangong Liuyun only smiled and pinched Su Luo’s nose: “Luo girl was inside, even if it were mountains of daggers, or sea of flames, this king will also enter, I must enter.”

Even though he was smiling, a serious expression penetrated through that smile, as he unblinkingly gazed at Su Luo.

Su Luo humbly slanted her head away.

This kind of deep feeling that held nothing back, how could she bear it?

“Cough, cough, cough— —”

The intensity of the fire in the cave of flames was really too great, the temperature was red-hot. Even if you had spirit power to protect the body, you could still feel the waves of scorching heat.

Nangong Liuyun, without saying anything more, pressed his large palms against Su Luo’s back, pouring a steady flow of spirit power into her body.

The spirit force was divided into two parts.

One part was to help her build a touch of defense within her body to withstand the roasting heat of the flames that assailed her.

The other part was a lot gentler. It circulated inside Su Luo’s body. warmly supporting her five viscera and six bowels.

Before, Su Luo was chased by Li Aotian in order to kill her until she fled in all directions, and was smashed by one fist after another. Her internal injuries were really serious. If she was not immediately treated, it would leave behind permanent residual effects.

It was after quite a while before Su Luo waved her hand, indicating for Nangong Liuyun to stop.

She moved to and fro for a long time, but Nangong Liuyun still hadn't taken notice of her. Su Luo couldn't help but to turn her head around to look, and couldn't help but to stop while staring blankly.

Nangong Liuyun turned his face away, that pair of demonically charming and alluring phoenix eyes clearly were a little moist.

"Nangong..." Su Luo tugged at his sleeves, swaying it slightly: "I'm okay, really."

Nangong Liuyun sucked in a deep breath of air, from his position at her back, his arms encircled her into his embrace, tightly pinning her to his chest.

His face was motionlessly buried between her head of hair and shoulders, his tone had a repressed, bloody, violent wrath: "This king will give you an account for this."

"Nangong..."

What Su Luo wanted to say was interrupted by Nangong: "This king knows, Li family is one of the ten great families with influential roots and intertwined interests of unfathomable depths, but so what?"

"Dare to bully this king's Luo girl, then they must be prepared to have their entire family exterminated!" Nangong Liuyun's tone didn't fluctuate, however, it possessed a chilliness that made people tremble in fear.

"However, for now, I still can't make a move, could Luo girl wait a few days for this king to act?" Nangong Liuyun's tone was very soft, like a goose feather brushing by, carrying a faint trace of guilt.

Su Luo silently watched him for a while.

She still remembered that day in Sunset Mountain Range, when he tossed her

aside to run to save the Jade Lake's Fairy.

Whereas now, she had become a person he must protect under his wing. For her, he would choose to eliminate the entire Li family in the future.

What virtues did Su Luo have to be able to make the majestic His Highness Prince Jin, who was looked at wishfully by all the women on this continent, that mighty Prince Jin would move to act to this extent for her.

Su Luo was momentarily silenced and this made Nangong Liuyun move his limbs in a somewhat panicked manner.

He anxiously explained to her: "If you don't beat the snake to death, it will come back to cause you endless calamity. This king will take action at the time when the outcome is certain, are you now blaming this king?"

Su Luo slowly shook her head.

He was as respected as a god, but in front of her, he would soften his voice and lower his dignity to ask for her favor. How could she still blame him?

Su Luo smiled: "It's not urgent, wait until I become strong, and we will go together to wipe out the Li family."

Li Yaoyao chased her to kill her, Li Aotian also pursued her to kill her. It certainly could be considered that she and the Li family had formed a deep enmity and great hatred.

Nangong Liuyun, all of a sudden, smiled, and he used more strength to rub Su Luo's head: "Good, it's a deal."

Nangong Liuyun smiled somewhat joyfully.

This could also be considered Luo girl's commitment to him right?

## Chapter 482 – A matter of life and death (9)

---

Waiting until her strength matured to the extent of being able to exterminate the Li family; it was still very far away. Then, within this short amount of time, at least she had given him a promise.

“What are you smiling about?” Su Luo saw him smiling somewhat foolishly, and she suspiciously asked.

“Laughing about you, this girl, having bitten off more than you can chew, now, don’t even know if we can leave here or not.” Nangong Liuyun, in a very good mood, flicked her forehead.

“Ouch.” Su Luo covered her forehead and rolled her eyes at Nangong Liuyun. Immediately after, she also laughed, her dimples were as beautiful as flowers.

In the previous incarnation, when she was together with Yun Qi, he was always gentle and would never tease her. The methods of interaction between them was as ordinary as water.

Originally, she thought that this was the normal way people in love would interact, but now, with Nangong Liuyun’s appearance, he had toppled her way of thinking.

Being protected and lovingly spoiled by a person turned out to feel like this... unfamiliar and strange, but making a person’s heart burst with joy.

“What are you thinking about? With this kind of very happy appearance?” Nangong Liuyun sat by her side, his palm was placed around her Lingtai meridian (1), since the start, ready at any time to protect her body.

Su Luo laughingly smiled: “Obviously I’m laughing at you.”

“Laughing at this king?”

Su Luo nodded her head seriously: “It couldn’t have been easy for you to be

born so gifted and obtain everything in this lifetime. Look at you, status, innate gift, martial arts, appearance...of these items, which ones the Gods weren't partial to you, partial to the extent of being difficult to endure. But you are such a fool, saying you would abandon it all and then just abandoning it, going so far as to come to accompany me in throwing one's life away. There wouldn't be another person as foolish as you in this world."

Nangong Liuyun gave two snorts of dissatisfaction: "If this king is a fool, then you are an idiot."

"Nonsense." Su Luo retorted back, unconvinced.

Nangong Liuyun, with a straight face, explained to her: "Obviously lacking the strength and still pretending to be powerful. Clearly, you knew Li Aotian was itching to kill you and you still deliberately drew him away. For this king, you set aside the chance to live. You tell me, if your variety of melon isn't an idiot (2), then what kind of melon is it? Or is it stupid?"

Mentioning this matter, Nangong Liuyun's heart was especially complicated, with anger and sweet happiness existing at the same time.

He was itching to grab Su Luo and very fiercely smack her butt a few times, giving her a memorable lesson about making her cherish herself more from now on.

But, it was also because it showed that she cared about him, that the corner of his mouth couldn't help but tilt up from being in a very good mood.

Setting aside her chance to live for another person? Su Luo secretly stuck out her tongue. She wasn't that great, okay? Clearly this was the best plan, because only when Nangong's cultivation was restored would they have a chance to win.

Seeing Nangong Liuyun with that immensely proud, self-satisfied and elated appearance, she felt too embarrassed to expose the truth.

All around were golden-colored flames, like fire snakes dancing wildly about. That roasting hot temperature could almost transform a person into ashes.

In this kind of critical situation, the feelings between the two also heated up rapidly immediately after.

Su Luo felt somewhat unwell and pushed Nangong Liuyun: “I cannot move, you go search the surroundings for another way out.”

Nangong Liuyun was definitely not reassured about Su Luo, so he shook his head: “No, this king will carry you on his back, we will go together.”

Not long ago, he had already experienced the deep pain of nearly losing her, how could he now leave her alone by herself again in this cave of flames?

Before Su Luo could react, Nangong Liuyun had already placed her on his shoulders.

Resting on his strong, powerful back and experiencing the warmth his back, all of a sudden, from out of nowhere, Su Luo felt a trace of security.

It was as if resting on his back was similar to growing underneath a large tree beneath the blue sky. The road before her had him blocking the wind and protecting her from the rain. No matter what, she did not need to worry, did not need to be afraid of anything.

In the wake of him slowly walking forward, Su Luo’s mind instantly recalled a short paragraph. It was the words Kuang Kuang (3) wrote that Su Luo once saw in a magazine.

*1) Lingtai meridian – This is the acupuncture point on your back between the sixth and seventh thoracic vertebrae of the spine.*

*2) idiot – This entire sentence is a play on the Chinese character 瓜. The character 瓜 refers to any type of melon or gourd, while the word for idiot and fool both contains this character. Idiot in Chinese is 傻瓜 while fool is 傻瓜 (my choice of translations since both have similar meaning). Su Luo called Nangong Liuyun a fool, then he called her an idiot. Finally Nangong Liuyun is asking her to choose whether she is an idiot or stupid. Stupid also has the melon character 蠢瓜.*

*3) Kuang Kuang – After a google search this name is of a Japanese writer and blogger. She wrote a book and I think it was translated into Chinese. So the paragraph was lifted from her book.*

## Chapter 483 – A matter of life and death (10)

---

She said: ‘All my life, I longed to be well treasured by a man, put in an appropriate place, maintained carefully, averted from being frightened, removed from bitter hardship, prohibited from wandering everywhere aimlessly and homeless, prevented from being alone with no branches to depend on. But, that person, I know, I had known all along, he would never come.’

Her Mr. Right would never come.

But Su Luo, who was resting on Nangong Liuyun’s wide, warm back, the corner of her mouth rose slightly, her Mr. Right...could it be he was already here?

Nangong Liuyun, seeing that Su Luo had her head buried in the crevice between his head and shoulder, couldn’t help being somewhat anxious. With a deeply worried tone, he said: “Are you feeling unwell again?”

While saying this, he was about to put Su Luo down so he could pour more spirit power into her body.

Su Luo stopped his hand, a shallow smile on her mouth: “It’s nothing, let’s continue to look. I hope we can get out faster.”

“If you feel unwell, remember, you must tell me, okay?” Nangong Liuyun’s expression was stern and solemn, repeatedly making it clear.

Su Luo buried her face in the nest of his shoulder, nodding slightly.

In this lifetime, if she wanted to find another person that treated her this well, the chances are that it would be very unlikely..

The betrayal in her previous life had thoroughly closed her heart. Nangong Liuyun’s appearance, little by little, like a fine rain, had silently oiled the door in her heart, opening it.

She wished to give herself a chance, and also hoped to give Nangong Liuyun a

chance.

Since it was so, then she would abide by the three month agreement to be together and take a look. Su Luo's heart had finally made a decision.

A crafty smile flashed through her eyes, even though she thought this way, she still wouldn't tell him just now.

In fact, the present situation was so dangerous that her mind really should not be thinking about this kind of emotion and love stuff right now.

First of all, the onslaught of the roasting heat from the flames, this was the greatest troublesome matter.

She could not allow Nangong Liuyun to pour more spirit power into her right? This way, she would be fine, but he would be worn out first.

Gradually, Su Luo felt her eyelids becoming somewhat heavy and her consciousness becoming somewhat fuzzy. She slowly fell into a deep sleep.

In midst of dozing, Su Luo's spirit floated into her space.

At this point of time, the little divine dragon, in her space, had already restored his vigor earlier. He already didn't have that kind of dried up, shriveled, defeated appearance from before.

Seeing Su Luo come over, the little divine dragon covered his little buttocks, with tears glistening in his eyes as he looked at Su Luo.

Su Luo was looked at by his large pair of clear, monochrome, limpid eyes until her heart turned soft. She hurriedly asked what was the matter with him.

The always clever and cute little divine dragon, this time, to her surprise, quite uncharacteristically rumbled loudly to Su Luo, making complaints about Nangong Liuyun's wicked conduct. He even suggested that Su Luo kick this abominable, bad person!

Su Luo suddenly didn't know whether to laugh or cry. After saying a few sentences to appease him, he finally again regained his clever and cute little appearance.

Suddenly, the little divine dragon handed Su Luo something, his eyes were entirely filled with an excited light: "Awoo, awoo, awoo——" Treasure, a

treasure!

“Eh?” Su Luo immediately recognized it, this thing was the fiery red stone she had kicked before in the Amethyst Fish Palace.

Later, due to being influenced by her blood, it resulted in a strange change, turning it as transparent as suet jade. It was white and transparent as amber, so bright as to illuminate a person.

“What could this thing possibly be used for?” Su Luo accepted this chunk of rock, doubtfully flipping it over and over in her hand.

“Luo Luo! Luo Luo! Quickly wake up, wake up!” Outside her space, Nangong Liuyun anxiously slapped Su Luo’s cheeks.

He didn’t pay attention for barely a moment, and she unexpectedly fainted again! Nangong Liuyun’s entire face was anxious, spirit force flowed like a river into Su Luo’s body, as if it cost nothing.

Su Luo slowly opened both eyes.

“At last, you are awake.” Nangong Liuyun unhappily glared at her, he was so scared, his body was covered in cold sweat.

“I’m okay.” Su Luo struggled to stand up.

Suddenly, Su Luo stopped and stared blankly.

She looked foolishly at that chunk of white stone in her hand, momentarily, she could not react——

How could it be like this?

# Chapter 484 – Leaving the region of flames

## (1)

---

Su Luo lowered her head to look at the stone she gripped in her hand, which had already changed into a cold chunk of jade.

Its size didn't change, still the size of a duck egg, the color was also a pure, crisp white, but— —

Su Luo was astonished to discover that ever since she held onto this strange stone, afterwards, the threatening roasting heat in her body from the hot flames was actually absorbed by it, thread by thread. Thus, the pressure on her was diminished and eventually stopped.

This was unlikely to be real, right?

Su Luo's heart was both happy, amazed, and stupefied by this nice surprise that suddenly occurred.

If it was really like this, then doesn't it mean that as long as she held onto the stone, she wouldn't have to worry about the high temperature? Which now was at a degree that was like peeling the skin off human flesh in the cave of flames? That they could continue to survive in this cave of flames?

Nangong Liuyun saw Su Luo standing at the original place with a foolish blank expression, the corner of her mouth pointed up slightly, appearing to be pleasantly surprised, excited and also with an incredulous expression. He couldn't help but be a little surprised.

“What happened?”

Su Luo lifted her head to look towards him, her clear, monochrome, limpid eyes were brimming with joy.

It was too late to think more, and she handed over the stone in her hand: “You have a look, see what this is.”

Nangong Liuyun took the offered stone. Before he could start using his spirit force, he discovered that the hot flames around his body unexpectedly flowed into the stone like the bubbling of creek water. The temperature in the air was abruptly lowered to some extent.

Nangong Liuyun’s always unperturbed handsome face also had a startled appearance. Subsequently, a smiling expression that was gentle as jade and as tranquil and intoxicating as the cherry blossoms in March, appeared: “A very good stone, indeed, it truly is a good stone. It was practically made for you based on your specifications, quickly hold onto it well, by all means, don’t lose it.”

Nangong Liuyun earnestly, prudently and with a very serious expression, stared at Su Luo, stressing each word, warning her.

Even though his words were solemn, however, his heart was exceptionally happy, happier than if he was the one who got a treasure.

The heatwave in this cave of flames rushed to the sky with a scorching hot breath. He could hold on, but his Luo girl, even with his spirit power pouring into her, might not necessarily be able to withstand the heat.

But now, everything was good. With this chunk of rock that could automatically absorb the heat, as long as the stone was not lost, his Luo girl would be safe and secure.

“Okay.” Su Luo nodded her head seriously and tightly clenched onto that stone.

“This chunk of stone was still something I accidentally kicked in the Amethyst Fish Palace. Originally, I thought it was useless, and picked it up in passing, but who would have imagined that now, it would be so useful.” Su Luo’s eyes squinted slightly with a smile that showed she was extremely pleased with herself.

“Alas, girl, this luck of yours...” Nangong Liuyun rubbed Su Luo’s head, momentarily, he was speechless and also didn’t know whether to laugh or cry.

If it came to luck, all the people in front of her would be completely defeated.

“Luck is also a part of strength, this proves my strength is also pretty good.” Su Luo said with some self-satisfaction.

“Yes, it is indeed pretty good.” This point Nangong Liuyun was actually in favor of: “On this earth, could there be a few people that could run away for three days and three nights while being pursued to be killed by a seventh rank martial artist?”

Mentioning Li Aotian, Su Luo’s heart became angry: “Fortunately, he is already dead, otherwise...Humph!”

Nangong Liuyun tenderly caressed her white as jade cheeks: “When all’s said and done, it is still because your strength is not enough.”

“That is actually a fact.” Su Luo secretly breathed out a sigh, her strength was indeed too lacking.

Now, the people that were active around her, even the worst was at fifth or sixth rank, while she was still pitifully at the peak of third rank. How could you ask her to continue muddling along with them?

“Therefore, we shouldn’t be in a hurry to go out. First, I should single-mindedly cultivate for a period of time in this cave of flames.” Su Luo made a fist and solemnly said.

Nangong Liuyun had a hesitant expression, slightly disapproving of this idea: “You can cultivate at anytime, you need not be so impatient at this time.”

# Chapter 485 – Leaving the region of flames

## (2)

---

“But a natural cultivation place like this cave of flames, is really difficult to find. Moreover, both you and I have the fire attribute (1), cultivating here will definitely save effort and lead to better results.”

Su Luo looked at him very seriously: “You need not be worried about me. With this stone, the surrounding high temperature is already of no threat to me.”

Nangong Liuyun conceded that what Su Luo said were all very reasonable, but he still wasn't very much in favor of it: “Wait until we find an exit, then we will leave at once.”

“Good.” Su Luo smiled while nodding her head.

The cut off dragonstone had already fallen, wanting to leave was very difficult.

Consequently, the two of them calmed down their hearts and started to cultivate in the cave of flames.

Su Luo fished around in her space and finally took out a secret book of fire system cultivation method. She opened her eyes wider to look, it was actually the first book she had tossed in from before,《Weaving Inferno》.

“《Weaving Inferno》?” Nangong Liuyun had an odd expression on his face as he glanced at Su Luo, muttered and said: “Your luck is actually pretty good, the Jade Lake Palace has exactly this book of 《Weaving Inferno》. They hide it away like a precious treasure, rarely letting others see it.”

“Pfft!” Su Luo suddenly laughed, “Looks like I and the Li family are bound by fate, even the secret book of martial arts is the same version. Then, is there a person in the Li family that is cultivating this martial arts?”

Nangong Liuyun's fine black hair flowed down in a torrent, carrying an uninhibited and elegant feel, making the side of his face even more demonically charming and tempting. One could only see him nodding his head: "Li family's foremost person of the third generation, Li Shengtian, cultivated this. Previously, he was seventh rank, I don't know his current cultivation."

"Oh, Li Shengtian?" Su Luo indicated that she had never even heard of this name.

Nangong Liuyun's beautiful eyes were like remote black agate with a bright luster, as he slowly said: "Li Aotian's arrogance is very great, but compared to Li Shengtian, he could simply be described as modest."

"So, you are saying this Li Shengtian is very unlikable right?"

"Naturally." Nangong Liuyun uttered clearly and coldly in an even tone. A pair of beautiful, long and narrow eyes looked towards Su Luo with a devilishly flattering expression. He nodded his head as though it was a matter of course: "Around thirty years old and trained to the seventh rank, his talent is still considered pretty good."

Nangong Liuyun reluctantly gave a somewhat positive evaluation.

Su Luo stuck out her tongue: "Your standards are too harsh, people like Li Shengtian, on this continent, are already considered to be extraordinarily gifted. How could everyone be an evildoer like you, reaching eighth rank at this age?"

Nangong Liuyun lifted up Su Luo's chin, his lips hooked up into a jaunty smile the shape of a water caltrop, beaming with joy: "Girl, this king, in your heart is this amazing?"

Narcissistic guy, give him a little sunshine and he would automatically glitter brilliantly.

Su Luo pinched his face, her smiling expression was splendid: "Yes, that's right, only you are the most amazing. Quickly go find a route out, otherwise, such an amazing person shall forever be stranded in this cave of flames, unable to go out and be a scourge of the common people."

"For what reason would this king go be a scourge to those people? This king will only be a scourge to you." Saying this, Nangong Liuyun took the opportunity

to move closer to Su Luo and placed a kiss on her cheek.

Su Luo disgruntledly kicked him: “Quickly go, quickly go. Stop delaying.”

With Su Luo’s kick, Nangong Liuyun could only stand up with a faintly complaining expression. He obediently went to look for a way out.

After walking two steps, he still turned his head, reluctant to part her, looking at Su Luo with a complaining expression.

Su Luo resembling a queen as she impatiently waving her hand: “Go quickly and return quickly.”

“Got it.” Nangong Liuyun responded discontentedly.

Wait until he returned to his official residence, then he must marry Su Luo and bring her home. At that time, however he wanted to embrace her, he would embrace her, however he wanted to kiss her, he would kiss her.

When the time comes, he must kiss her according to three meals a day.

Nangong Liuyun remembered his complaints while flying away.

Su Luo watched his leaving figure from the back, then she calmed down and started to cultivate that book of 《Weaving Inferno》.

*1) Both having the fire attribute: This was clearly a mistake on the author’s part because we were told later that Nangong Liuyun has Wind attribute... So he has wind/water/lightning. Maybe she meant his lightning attribute is also good to cultivate in the cave of fire since it is a stronger version of fire?*

# Chapter 486 – Leaving the region of flames

## (3)

---

The Weaving Inferno was altogether divided into five levels.

Su Luo now was cultivating the first level of the flaming spring state.

The flaming spring state had nothing to do with spring water, it was instead related to the range of a spring.

Within one move, the flames would be able to cover the entire mouth of a spring, then would she have succeeded.

But now, Su Luo was merely at the peak of the third rank, if she wanted to cultivate this 《Weaving Inferno》, she really was barely qualified to do so.

However, it was also fortunate that she was inside this cave of flames. These flames could provide Su Luo with an endless stream of fire property. This made her cultivation smooth and easy, with half the work and getting twice the results.

The days of cultivating passed very quickly.

In the blink of an eye, more than ten days had passed.

For these more than ten days, every time Nangong Liuyun finished cultivating, he would go to explore a way out. But every time, he would return disappointed.

After these more than ten days of cultivating, Su Luo's strength could only be described as progressing one thousand miles in one day.

Because she had the assistance of her space, Su Luo's cultivation was different than other people's.

Her spirit was cultivating space system laws within her space.

The Su Luo outside her space was cultivating the fire property laws.

With both elements combined to cultivate together, complementing and helping each other, working mutually in harmony, it made Su Luo's strength rise very quickly. It was so fast, it was simply like flying in an airplane. It even made Nangong Liuyun exclaim in admiration at her cultivation speed.

This day, Su Luo had already faintly touched upon the thin boundary for promotion to the next rank.

She believed that very quickly, she would be promoted to the fourth rank.

In fact, so to speak, she had only stayed at the third rank for a very brief period of time. It was only because recently, there were many things happening, so it felt as if she had stayed at the third rank for a long time.

For more than ten days, her mind was highly focused, therefore, Su Luo intended to relax a little and rest properly. Afterwards, she would break through that final thin layer at the boundary, so as to make a breakthrough in one go.

At this moment, in Su Luo's space, a fair and honest but amusing thing was happening in there.

Once Su Luo saw it, she stopped her cultivating and watched, full of interest.

The little divine dragon, ever since he was tossed into Su Luo's space, afterwards, he became bored. But very soon, he found something he was interested in.

Since Su Luo had arrived on this uninhabited island, afterwards, she had nearly forgotten about the Amethyst Crystal Fish.

However, Su Luo might have forgotten, but the little divine dragon had dug out that Amethyst Crystal Fish she had tossed in a corner. He had placed it at the side of his little nest where he slept and stared at it all day long.

If you were to say that the little divine dragon was good to the little Amethyst Crystal Fish, this would be a misunderstanding of his intentions.

Everyday, according to the schedule of three meals a day, the little divine dragon would always appear in front of the Amethyst Crystal Fish and run around it in circles.

The Amethyst Crystal Fish would spit out crystal stones according to a schedule of three meals a day, just like a hen laying eggs daily.

As for whether the crystal stone that was spit out was high grade or not, this was related to luck and the person's moral quality.

Whenever the Amethyst Crystal Fish spit out a piece of crystal stone that landed in the sea-colored bowl, the little divine dragon would waste no time in stretching out his paw to grab that crystal stone, and without the slightest hesitation, he would deliver it into his mouth. Chewing the crystal stones with 'crunch, crunch' sounds, just like a little child chewing a piece of candy.

Every time, the little divine dragon would report for duty punctually on the dot, to the extent that Su Luo didn't even discover that occasionally, for a few times, cyan-colored and even blue-colored crystal stones had appeared.

However, without waiting for Su Luo to find them, these few pieces of crystal stones would be eaten by the little divine dragon as snacks.

If Su Luo knew that blue-colored crystal stones were eaten by the little divine dragon like sugar pills, very likely, she would cover her chest from heartache. It was a pity she was completely immersed in cultivating the space laws in her space.

Again, another day passed, and a burst of a faint spirit power fluctuation occurred in the air.

The Su Luo outside her space slowly opened her eyes, the corner of her mouth tilted up slightly. It was obvious that her mood was very joyful.

Nangong Liuyun opened his tightly closed phoenix eyes, with a very indolent, eminent, unapproachable, wild, and devilishly charming expression.

# Chapter 487 – Leaving the region of flames

## (4)

---

Nangong Liuyun slanted his head, his sword-like eyebrows lifted slightly, as he smilingly looked at Su Luo: “Successful?”

“Yeah!” Su Luo burst open into a shallow, faint, smiling expression. Unfolding into a lazy stretch, she then happily said: “Heaven will not disappoint a person who tries. I finally reached the fourth rank, really not easy ah.”

Nangong Liuyun pinched the tip of her nose, between laughter and tears: “If you consider this not easy, then won’t others be ashamed and unable to show their faces? Recall that you have just cultivated for a few days.”

Su Luo blinked her eyes, grumbling about it: “What few days, it will soon be five months.”

“Soon to be five months? You call this a long time?” The corner of Nangong Liuyun’s mouth perked up into a devilishly flattering smile, right now, he looked demonic yet with a sinister charm: “In less than five months, from lacking to having, from first rank to fourth rank, this speed of yours, what kind of speed is it? Since the beginning of recorded history on this continent, there was never such a speed being recorded.”

Immediately, Su Luo’s pair of eyes shone, bright and clear with a lively expression: “Really? Then doesn’t that mean I’m the first since the beginning of recorded history on this continent?”

“Yes!” Nangong Liuyun’s naturally beautiful, devilishly handsome face had a deep pair of eyes that were like pure crystal, sparkling and translucent. He said with certainty: “The list, with regards to cultivation speed, is indeed so.”

Su Luo was immediately very pleased. The corner of her mouth pointed up

high, her sharp scissors-like, limpid, bright eyes smiled until they were curved.

Before, she was still complaining about her cultivation speed being too slow, her strength being too weak. It was to the extent that she was always fleeing from being chased by people who wanted to kill her. She simply hadn't lived even a few peaceful days.

But hearing Nangong Liuyun's explanation, her heart immediately became more peaceful.

Speaking of which, her cultivation speed really was very fast. If it was known, Su Xi, who was commonly referred to as a little genius but at fourteen years old was also merely a fourth rank, then what about for Su Luo?

Before, she was still showing off in front of Su Luo, but now, Su Luo was totally capable of stepping on her, having her underneath her feet.

Nangong Liuyun's features were picturesque, as he smilingly looked at her: "If you are still able to maintain this speed afterwards, then reaching eight rank within two years is also not impossible."

"I'll hold you to your words." Su Luo smiled without holding back her complacent expression.

Suddenly, Su Luo's complexion changed slightly, as she stared with amazement at the stone in her hand. Then, she looked at Nangong Liuyun with astonishment, silently inquiring.

Nangong Liuyun's gaze landed on that piece of stone, suddenly, he was also somewhat speechless.

"This...what is going on?" Su Luo pointed to that mystical stone and asked in wonder.

Just a moment ago, it was still slowly absorbing the heat in Su Luo's surroundings, but after Su Luo was promoted to the fourth rank, this stone's appetite seemed to have all at once increased by a lot.

If you were to say that before, the stone was delicately swallowing and slowly chewing, but now, it was devouring everything ravenously.

This stone seemed to have a mystical magic power, able to get the flames to

automatically rush towards it.

After which these flames would be swallowed by it at a speed that the naked eye could see, immediately disappearing, not to be seen again.

“Have you felt that this cave of flames has changed somewhat?” Su Luo doubtfully asked.

Why was it that she felt that the temperature in this cave of flames was slightly lower than when she first entered? Was the reason because of her promotion in strength?

Unexpectedly, Nangong Liuyun’s pair of icy, deep, black eyes indicated that he agreed: “Even you are able to detect it, it has clearly lowered to the point of being obvious.”

“Are you implying that my strength is very lacking?” Su Luo gave him a cold glare, but once again, she restrained her eyes to seriously say: “Is it really probable that this stone had absorbed it all?”

Nangong Liuyun smiled somewhat enigmatically. His pretty eyelashes were jet-black, thick, and also slightly curled upwards. His lips were like red powder, contrasting against his skin and making him even more bewitchingly beautiful.

One could only see him laughingly pat Su Luo’s head: “Girl with good luck, go steal some happiness.”

# Chapter 488 – Leaving the region of flames

## (5)

---

Saying this, Nangong Liuyun left her behind to cultivate, as he again followed yesterday's track to look for a way out.

These dozen or so days, he had never given up on finding a way out, because he must bring Su Luo out of here. He didn't have the heart to have Su Luo accompany him, squandering away time in this cave of flames.

Such a huge cave of flames, more than half of it was already searched by him using a grid pattern, but there was still the southeast area that remained and that he hasn't visited before. Now, he was just using all his strength to search in this area.

Su Luo's attention was still placed upon that piece of strange stone.

What amazed people was that the surrounding temperature really was a little lower, to the extent that she could withstand the heat for the time it took to burn a stick of incense.

In the end, what was really inside this stone? It was simply too strange. Su Luo held it and examined it from left to right, she always felt that there was a very mystical existence inside, waiting for her to discover it from her exploration.

When Su Luo put her spirit force into the stone, besides feeling that the inside temperature could burn her hand, she couldn't find anything else. Previously, this chunk of stone could still shriek and nearly draw Li Aotian's pursuit to kill her. But now, it seemed to have sunk into a deep sleep without even the slightest reaction.

But as per Nangong Liuyun's honest words, she really was extremely lucky.

It was because this stone had already recognized her as its master from the

drops of her blood. The more flames it absorbed, then the greater it would be in assisting her in cultivating the fire attribute.

At this point of time, Su Luo really couldn't help but wish it could absorb all the blazing flames within the entire cave.

As far as Su Luo was concerned, this cave of flames was really an exceptionally great place to cultivate. There wasn't another place that could compare to this naturally formed cave of flames.

Since there was such a great environment for cultivation, Su Luo naturally wouldn't waste it. Therefore, these days, she had all along been cultivating with the greatest effort.

Besides eating and sleeping, she was cultivating all the time. Moreover, she was cultivating both inside and outside of her space at the same time.

After about another ten days had passed, Su Luo, from the beginning of fourth rank, all at once soared to the middle of fourth rank. Su Luo's, this kind of cultivation, no matter where she was placed, it was an occurrence that would make people gasp in surprise.

Concurrently, more than half of the flames in this cave was absorbed by that strange stone. The temperature all around had dropped down in surrender. Now, even if Su Luo's hand wasn't holding the stone, she could still cultivate safely.

This was merely a short period of ten days, to have improved this quickly! Not only Su Luo, even Nangong Liuyun was speechless.

"This kind of cultivation speed, a problem wouldn't arise, right?" Su Luo looked at her own pair of hands, the corner of her mouth twitching slightly.

According to what she knew, a lot of people with pretty good talent. from the beginning to the middle of fourth rank, without a year's time, it was absolutely impossible. But, it was just ten days for her...ten days ah! This was simply...She couldn't even find words to describe it.

Nangong Liuyun thoroughly and carefully examined her body once over, finally, he relaxed the breath he was holding, then rubbed her head: "There is no harm to your body, the promotion of your strength can also be considered to be

stable. It can be assumed that there will be no problems.”

“Then that’s great.” Su Luo spread out both of her hands, expressing her lack of choice. Sometimes, when strength was promoted too fast, it was also a kind of burden.

However, a worried expression very quickly appeared on Su Luo’s face, as she let out a sigh: “Calculating the days, after another three days, it will be the agreed-upon life and death duel, but I can’t get out.”

Su Luo was really worried.

She was not the kind of person that would cower.

She had already accepted the written challenge, if she didn’t appear... how could she still live in the capital?

To say nothing of her strength rising so much right now, this was the best time for her to display her full capabilities. To be trapped like this, it made her feel as if she had smashed her fist into a pile of cotton.

The corner of Nangong Liuyun’s mouth merely hooked up, his smile somewhat mysterious. He pulled on Su Luo’s hand and said: “Come, follow this king for a walk.”

“Where are we going?” Su Luo curiously asked.

Nangong Liuyun merely smiled enigmatically and kept her in suspense: “Once we get there, you will know.”

The cave of flames was very large, all around were the golden-color of blazing flames, and visibility was very low.

One of Su Luo’s hand was being pulled along by Nangong Liuyun, the other hand held onto the stone, following along the meandering passageway to walk forward.

Didn’t know for how long they had walked, when up ahead, a very small stone room appeared.

Nangong Liuyun familiarly pushed open the heavy stone door, leading Su Luo by the hand, they entered together.

“Oh——” Seeing the thing in front of her eyes, Su Luo couldn't help but to cry out in surprise.

There was a very peculiarly-shaped golden coffin.

# Chapter 489 – Leaving the region of flames

## (6)

---

There was a dim layer of fluorescence floating around the golden coffin, like a transparent protective cover safeguarding the coffin within, not allowing a person to easily touch it.

“This is...” Su Luo looked doubtfully at Nangong Liuyun.

“This is a kind of ancient seal formation.” Nangong Liuyun’s features were picturesque with a purely sparkling appearance. He paused for a bit, then continued to explain: “As long as we can open the golden coffin, we will be able to go out.”

In her heart, Su Luo realized that the seal, traps and concealed weapons within this stone room had all been dealt with earlier by Nangong Liuyun. Otherwise, they wouldn’t be standing here so safely.

“Eh, there are words here.” Su Luo pointed to the place under the golden coffin’s underside, reading out loud, word by word: “If you want to activate this formation, the energies from one thousand green-colored crystal stones are required.”

“One thousand pieces? That many!” Su Luo couldn’t help but to blink her eyes a few times, speechlessly holding her forehead: “Isn’t this simply just conning people? Where will you find someone that would carry so many crystal stones on their body?”

Nangong Liuyun stood with his hands behind his back, his eyes as deep and pitch-black as a lake. He calmly nodded: “Clearly, this rule was tailor-made for you.”

Su Luo’s entire face was full of black lines.

She had no choice but to admit that Nangong Liuyun's words were extremely correct.

Apart from her who was lucky enough to carry her space with her, other people really didn't have the capabilities to all at once pay out this many crystal stones.

Su Luo felt her flesh hurting as she complained: "The expense of leaving home is one thousand green crystal stones, it really is a lion with its mouth wide open, it really is that if you have never been in charge of a household, you don't know how expensive wood and rice are."

However, the only thing that made Su Luo's mind more at peace was that the crown prince still owed her a great debt. Wait until she got out, this debt must be transferred to the crown prince.

Su Luo, while pouting and murmuring her complaints, reached her hand into her space to grab some. This grab made her expression freeze and immediately change.

Nangong Liuyun's bright, deep eyes that held back sea landed on Su Luo's face: "What's wrong?"

Su Luo's face had a wishing to cry but lacking the tears expression said: "My crystal stones! They. Are. Completely. Gone!"

"..." Nangong Liuyun was still as unperturbed as before: "What happened?"

Su Luo did not answer him, merely with one pull, she lifted out the main culprit, glaring very fiercely at him.

Now, the little divine dragon was cowering in fear, curled up into a ball, two little paws covering his face. He only dared to stealthily take measure of Su Luo through the narrow slit of his fingers.

Su Luo was so angry that she nearly slapped his little butt: "This damn child, stealthily eating all the crystal stones as snacks, too abominable, this really is that it's difficult to protect against the thief that comes from your own home."

She remembered that at that time when they entered the stone room, there were many crystal stone in the sea-colored bowl of the Amethyst Crystal Fish.

Besides green-colored crystal stones, there were also cyan-and blue-colored crystal stones. But just a moment ago, when Su Luo searched around, she discovered that not even a hair remained.

The little divine dragon blinked his huge limpid eyes, innocently and also bewilderedly looking at Su Luo. That little appearance seemed miserable, resulting in Su Luo unable to make a move to teach him a lesson.

Su Luo remained silent and could only glare at him accusingly: “This child, you, how could you think to eat it all as snacks? Should have saved some for illegal tolls, now we can’t get out.”

Rushing to catch the time for the appointment, with great difficulty, they found a door, but now, couldn’t go out. This kind of feeling was the most gloomy and suffocating.

The little divine dragon silently glanced at Su Luo, crooked his head and thought for some time. Finally, he still made a firm decision and took out a blue-colored crystal stone from his own pocket. He reluctantly handed it over to Su Luo.

Before, Su Luo had specifically asked Lu Luo to make clothes for the little puppy to wear, and she had even sewn on a few pockets.

As soon as she saw that blue crystal stone with teeth marks that had had half of it chewed away, Su Luo nearly exploded.

# Chapter 490 – Leaving the region of flames

## (7)

---

“You are still hiding food.” Su Luo glared at him.

The little divine dragon shrank back, and again, from his own pocket, silently, slowly, reluctantly, and after hesitating for a long time, finally, this time, handed an intact, blue-colored crystal stone over to Su Luo.

Su Luo gave a sigh: “Forget it, first put it aside, wait until there isn’t enough, and I’ll find you to try to gather the rest.”

That reluctant-to-part-with little appearance, looking at it was really too pathetic, making her seem like a female bandit, it was truly annoying.

Su Luo recalled that previously, she had placed a lot of Amethyst Thorned Fishes into her space. These days, she and Nangong Liuyun ate a few, but there ought to still be a lot left over.

Su Luo checked once through and also added the one and a half pieces of blue-colored crystal stone. After counting it over and over again, she was still a few short. As a result, she once again lifted up the little miser in front of her by the ear.

The miserly little divine dragon, with an aggrieved expression, once again took out a few pieces from his pocket and gave them to Su Luo. Afterwards, he snorted twice and turned his head away with his little mouth pouting. His tail was sticking up, clearly, he was very peeved at Su Luo.

This little thing also started to have a temper, truly rare to see.

Su Luo could only smile and coax him, while rubbing the fur under his chin, she promised: “Okay, okay, within the next month, regardless of what crystal stone the Amethyst Crystal Fish spits out, all will be given to you. This will make

up for it, right?”

Only now was the little divine dragon happy, excitedly shaking his tail, again rushing into Su Luo’s embrace, acting cute to rub against her.

Su Luo patted his little head and thought somewhat worriedly.

This little thing was obviously the dragon race’s most respected golden divine dragon, but was raised by her to resemble a puppy more and more. Wait until the little divine dragon’s father came to retrieve him, didn’t know if he would look for her to settle this debt.

But this was not the most worrying matter. The thing that made her most depressed was after she had gathered enough crystals to activate the formation. She then discovered that she was already so poor as to have nowhere to go.

Except for the Amethyst Crystal Fish that could spit out crystal stones like a hen laying eggs, Su Luo didn’t even have a red crystal stone in her hand. She was really so poor as to have empty ringing sounds in her pockets.

The pitiful her didn’t know, that within the next month in the future, the little divine dragon’s luck was full to bursting. The Amethyst Crystal Fish gave him a lot of face, all the crystal stones it spit out was high grade, frankly making Su Luo so jealous until her eyes were red. This was something that happened later.

After scraping together enough crystal stones, Su Luo handed everything over to Nangong Liuyun.

Nangong Liuyun extracted all the energy from the Amethyst Thorned Fishes and crystal stones and placed it in the middle of the formation.

Nangong Liuyun’s phoenix eyes were tightly closed, only his hands were forming hand seals at lightning speed. He formed many seals with his hands, each and every one of them was very complicated. These seals were like characters shooting around on top of the transparent protective layer.

Time passed, little by little.

Didn’t know how much time had passed, before Nangong Liuyun suddenly opened his pair of eyes. He grabbed Su Luo by the hand, bringing her to enter the golden coffin together.

Lying inside the golden coffin, the top, with a 'thump', closed. All around was pitch-black.

The space inside the golden coffin was not large, two people lying inside was somewhat crowded. Nangong Liuyun easily turned and had Su Luo's entire body rested on his body.

Su Luo's head just happened to bump into his chest, and she could clearly hear Nangong Liuyun's heartbeat.

Nangong Liuyun calmly said: "If we could be born under the same blanket and die in the same coffin, then it's also pretty good."

Su Luo's words dampened the mood: "I want to live well, and keep living for a very long time."

Nangong Liuyun pinched the tip of her nose, raising his sharp eyebrows with a ghost of a smile: "That way is even better, this king will stick to you for a very long time."

Su Luo rolled her eyes at him.

Suddenly, a strong spirit force attacked towards their forehead. Su Luo felt a burst of dizziness and shook her head. Very quickly, she sunk into a swamp-like darkness.

# Chapter 491 – Leaving the region of flames

## (8)

---

When Su Luo woke up again, she found herself lying in Nangong Liuyun's embrace.

She opened her eyes, and the first things that entered her field of vision were blue skies and white clouds. The green grass with fresh and clean air, and there was no roasting temperature. Su Luo all at once sat up from being startled.

“Bang——” Su Luo suddenly sitting up without any warning, and Nangong Liuyun, who just so happened to be leaning over to wipe her face, purely by chance their heads knocked together.

“Ouch——” She covered her face and nose, the tip of her nose and her forehead was bumped, making them extremely sore.

Nangong Liuyun laughingly helped her massage her forehead. With deep eyes that were charming, gentle and alluring, he softly asked: “How is it, does it still hurt?”

When he was massaging it, he also poured in a cool, refreshing stream of spirit power. Su Luo's burning pain from before immediately disappeared.

“It's much better.” Su Luo patted her somewhat dizzy head, with her pair of eyes looking around: “Is this considered as us having gotten out?”

This area, she was very familiar with. At that time, she had been hit by Li Aotian until she spit out blood, and had run all the way towards the cave of flames. Along the entire way, she had been continuously slapped till she spit out blood, how could she ever forget this road.

It was just a short time ago. Things remained the same but people had changed. Li Aotian was already dead, whereas they had walked out alive from

that cave of flames.

“What day is today?” Su Luo didn’t know how long she was unconscious.

Nangong Liuyun knew the meaning of her words and said: “Don’t worry, there are still two days until the competition.”

That was to say, she had been unconscious for a whole day and night?

She still remembered that Nangong Liuyun’s luxurious yacht, from the seacoast of the mainland to Amethyst Island, took an entire day and night. Afterwards, she had drifted blindly with the waves, floating for another day and night before arriving at this uninhibited island.

Now, they didn’t even have a wooden raft, perhaps they wouldn’t make it in time.

“Must you go and participate?” Nangong Liuyun gazed seriously at Su Luo. His handsome face was as though it had been carved with a knife, with beautiful eyes that was deep and mirror-like of a lake.

According to his idea, he would just send people to directly get rid of Su Qing and it would be settled. Why go to so much trouble?

Su Luo raised an eyebrow. She looked at him with a serene expression, her tone serious: “This is my first fight in front of the public, I must show up.”

If she hadn’t exposed her strength, then it was tolerable, but since her strength had already been exposed, then she might as well confidently show it off. So as to avoid those people still trampling on her like weeds.

“Since you are determined to do this, this king will naturally help you achieve your heart’s desires.” Nangong Liuyun smilingly looked at her and picked up a block of hollow wood in passing. Then, he pulled her along to walk in the direction of the beach.

Just this block of hollow wood? Su Luo raised her head to look at Nangong Liuyun in puzzlement.

Now, his fair, handsome face, with the bridge of his nose sticking up high, its outline seemed to have been carved by nature. The corners were distinct, making his handsomeness one that could not be produced locally, a bewitching

beauty that made it nearly impossible for people to shift their gaze away.

Nangong Liuyun pulled her along, his body tall and straight. His speed was as fast as flying, and very quickly, they arrived at the edge of the beach.

He conveniently tossed that block of hollow wood, which was about half a meter long and one quarter of a meter wide, towards the sea.

“Are we not going to make a wooden raft?” Su Luo thought about it and still felt it was unsafe.

“Do you trust this king?” The corner of his eyes and the tip of his brow carried a smiling expression, as he earnestly looked at Su Luo.

“I trust you.” Su Luo’s pair of eyes was as black as a dot of lacquer, glistening and shining.

“Then just firmly believe to the end, this king will prove it for you to see. How correct the choice you made is.” Nangong Liuyun held onto her hand tightly, rose very quickly and shot towards that hollow wood that had already floated far away.

Very quickly, he brought Su Luo to land steadily on top of that hollow wood.

“Let’s go.” Nangong Liuyun gave a hearty laugh towards her. Pulling on her hand, the two of them stood on the hollow wood, with one in the front and the other in the back.

Following one command from Nangong Liuyun, that piece of hollow wood bearing the weight of two people suddenly seemed to have had a heavy duty motor installed on it, and very rapidly, flew forward.

# Chapter 492 – Leaving the region of flames

## (9)

---

Su Luo was able to sense Nangong Liuyun controlling all the wind power in the surroundings. He condensed, mixed, then compressed the wind force before finally using it to push this hollow wood forward with flying speed.

Su Luo heard the surrounding wind blowing around making howling sounds, but she couldn't feel the cold.

Due to Nangong Liuyun controlling the wind speed, it was as if a transparent cover surrounded their body. Not even a thread of cold air was allowed to leak in.

Su Luo turned her head around to look at where the hollow wood rushed across. It left behind a long water mark that didn't disperse for a long time.

This kind of speed was a lot faster compared to the speed of the luxurious yacht from before.

Suddenly, Su Luo's complexion changed slightly.

"The region of waterspouts." Su Luo firmly grasped Nangong Liuyun's hand as she said in a low voice. Her tone carried a little anxiety.

Before, the occurrences from crossing this region of waterspouts was still vivid in her mind. She saw with her own eyes the powerful Lan Xuan and them also spending a tremendous amount of strength before they crossed it.

Let alone mentioning that at that time, they had a luxurious yacht, whereas now, they only had a very small piece of wood.

"Don't be afraid, you have this king present." Nangong Liuyun's face was picturesque, his lips were blood red. He patted her head while smiling: "Open

your eyes wide, watch this king perform some special stunts for you to see.”

Each and every one of the black-colored spirals gave off a blistering atmosphere, like the death god opening his bloody mouth greedily. If you were inattentive, you would be swallowed, not even leaving a skeleton behind.

Even confronted with such a legendary ghostly prison, Nangong Liuyun’s expression did not change. He even smiled, a smile that resembled the light clouds and gentle wind.

In between the two water spirals pressed together, one could only see his foot step down slightly and they passed through the middle like a rocket. Their speed was fast to the extreme, only leaving behind a white-colored afterimage.

Up ahead, again, there were another three black spirals side by side.

Nangong Liuyun hugged Su Luo close to him by her slender waist, that hollow piece of wood seemed to be stuck to their feet.

Nangong Liuyun carried the hollow wood and jumped high up, landing a distance of more than thirty meters ahead into a tranquil region of water. They passed through this scary experience without mishap.

The entire region of waterspouts, there was no pattern to the densely-packed waterspouts. Nangong Liuyun brought Su Luo through these waterspouts while stepping on the hollow wood, avoiding to the left and dodging to the right.

Nangong Liuyun’s movements seemed to be barging violently around, but in fact, every step he made was accurately calculated by his wise and far-sighted brain. Furthermore, every step landed perfectly, being more frightening than harmful.

This kind of experience was simply too thrilling, stimulating and also fun.

In the beginning, Su Luo was still a little anxious, but afterwards, her mood didn’t even have the slightest sign of being worried. Moreover, she also felt that it was extremely fun.

Compared to this, bungee jumping, rock climbing, sailing, these kind of extreme sports were simply too pathetic, don’t you think?

“Is it fun?” Nangong Liuyun held on tightly to her waist, ensuring that she was

in an area within reach.

“Yes! Really enjoyable.” Su Luo excitedly nodded her head.

She still recalled when Beichen Ying mocked Lan Xuan and Anye, saying that the time it took them to cross the region of waterspouts with their combined effort, also could not be compared to a trace of Nangong Liuyun’s.

Previously, she didn’t believe it, but now, she believed it firmly without any doubt. Nangong Liuyun really did have this kind of strength.

In this region of waterspouts that everyone feared and couldn’t avoid, in this ghostly prison of whirlpools that had buried a countless number of traveling ships. With regards to the young lovers, this place had become an adventurous game for them, playing until they were extremely happy and satisfied.

If other people were to catch sight of this, very likely, they would be considered lunatics. They really hadn’t seen people take the region of waterspouts as a playground.

Nangong Liuyun’s speed was very fast, he finished crossing through this huge region of waterspouts in less time than it took to burn a stick of incense.

Seeing Su Luo having so much fun that she wished to continue, Nangong Liuyun laughingly pinched the tip of her nose: “This region of waterspouts isn’t considered much, next time, this king will take you to Thousand Miles of Ghostly Prison, now, that place is really fun.”

# Chapter 493 – Leaving the region of flames

## (10)

---

A place that could be called as fun by Nangong Liuyun, Su Luo felt it was better she didn't go to be clever, so as to avoid losing her little life when not being careful while playing.

Su Luo changed the topic: "According to this speed, we ought to make it in time."

A day had already passed, they only had the last twenty-four hours left.

"This is needless worrying, however, if we had a boat, you would be more comfortable." Nangong Liuyun nodded his head, but very quickly, his face had a pondering, smiling expression.

"What's going on?" Su Luo followed his line of sight to look forward, and saw a black dot with flying speed continuously approaching their location.

That clearly was a boat.

"This really is dozing off and being presented with a pillow. We just so happen to chance upon it." A crafty smile appeared on Su Luo's mouth: "You take a guess, is it Beichen Ying and them coming to look for us?"

Nangong Liuyun very surely and very disdainfully shook his head: "Beichen Ying's boat isn't this bad."

Su Luo was speechless, this guy's point of view while identifying things was different than other people, yet, she had no choice but to concede that what he said made some sense.

Very quickly, that boat appeared in front of Su Luo and Nangong Liuyun.

A middle-aged fellow with a vulgar appearance, when he saw Su Luo,

immediately, his eyes brightened, smiling until he exposed a mouthful of yellow teeth.

“Little lady, why should you be drifting on the ocean? Quickly, come get on the boat. On our boat, we have food, drinks and even hot water to bathe with, much better than drifting on the ocean.”

This person ran around on the boat all year long, he was well-versed and keenly knew this line of work.

People that were drifting in the ocean, what they wanted the most was a mouthful of hot food and having some fresh water to drink.

Who knew that Su Luo would only shoot an indifferent glance at him, and turn her head around to ask Nangong Liuyun: “Should we go up or not?”

Before Nangong Liuyun could speak, that vulgar, middle-aged fellow said a sentence in rebuke: “He cannot come up.”

“Why can’t he come up? Why is it that you guys are rescuing people and can only save one person?” Su Luo pretended to be furious and shouted.

“Save people? Hahaha.” Suddenly, each and every one of the strong and manly guys that appeared, pointed to Su Luo and burst into loud laughter.

That vulgar, middle-aged guy laughed even more while holding his belly: “Little girl, you didn’t think that we would be your saviors, right? Even saving people, too ridiculous and funny.”

An onlooker in yellow clothing continued while laughing: “Does the little lady know how to read? Look at our name!”

“Dragon Gang of the Eastern Sea?” Su Luo doubtfully asked Nangong Liuyun: “Have you heard of them?”

Nangong Liuyun’s pair of deep, lake-like eyes that was holding back, showed a faint, belittling and ice-cold expression: “A little gang that doesn’t have the qualifications to enter this king’s ear.”

So arrogant, so powerful, so domineering of a remark.

If Nangong Liuyun hadn’t spoken, it would have been fine. Him saying this, he immediately offended the entire Dragon Gang of the Eastern Sea.

“Daring to look down upon our Dragon Gang of the Eastern Sea is simply courting death!” That vulgar, middle-aged fellow shouted out loud.

“Courting death!” A dense crowd of strong, manly guys simultaneously said repeatedly, suddenly, they were imposing and very formidable.

“People come, kill this man and capture this woman, and send her as a present to be our leader’s wife. Our leader will definitely reward us well!” The vulgar, middle-aged fellow directly gave the order.

The gaze he used to look at Su Luo gave off a strand of bright radiance. It was rare to encounter a pretty young lady on the ocean, if he let her get away, wasn’t it a waste of natural resources?

This Dragon of the Eastern Sea was not merely a single boat, after a rough count, there were actually as many as six boats.

Consequently, the six boats powerfully closed in around them, surrounding the hollow wood that Nangong Liuyun and Su Luo stood upon.

Nangong Liuyun’s blood red lips hooked up slightly. Instantly, he looked exceptionally beautiful, demonically insincere and matchless alluring.

This smile of his was just like his remark from before, once again infuriating the Dragon Gang of the Eastern Sea.

# Chapter 494 – Life and death duel (1)

---

Seeing these boats sailing towards them to surround them.

The corner of Nangong Liuyun's mouth lifted into a mocking, apathetic smile.

“Little young lady, quickly get on the boat, otherwise you will also die!” The vulgar, middle-aged guy said loudly towards Su Luo.

A faint smile appeared in the depths of Su Luo's eyes: “No need.”

“Why should you lose your life because of a repulsive male? Swords and spears have no eyes. At that time, when it accidentally injures a little beauty like you, then it will be unfortunate. Oh, quickly come on up, this uncle will love you dearly.” The middle-aged fellow displayed a mouthful of yellow teeth, his smile extremely vulgar.

Having heard what was said, the corner of Su Luo's mouth hooked into a ridiculing sneer : “Don't need to be lenient on my account, come at me with as many as you've got.”

The strength of these small fries were too weak, she was only worried that Nangong Liuyun would not face enough of a fight to enjoy himself.

“With this being the case, then don't blame us for not having tender protective feelings towards the fairer sex! Brothers, kill this man and everyone will be rewarded well!” The vulgar, middle-aged fellow saw Su Luo was ungrateful for the toast and would rather drink sour wine, so he also stopped being protective towards the fairer sex and loudly shouted the command.

“As you command!” A dense crowd of people below attacked towards the place where Nangong Liuyun stood.

A stream of sharp arrows was launched, bursting out like lightning, issuing an ear-piercing sound that rent the sky.

There were many arrows and they were fast, in addition, the angle was tricky, impossible for a person to defend against effectively.

Normally, they depended on this trick to run amuck and had no fear on the Eastern Sea, robbing a countless number of boats.

This time, they were all fully confident, because a male and female drifting blindly on the ocean, then shouldn't they be fairly easy to catch?

The corner of Nangong Liuyun's mouth slowly evoked into an indifferent and icily arrogant smile.

Without seeing how he moved, even his sleeves didn't lift up by the slightest bit, a strong spirit power burst out, forming a transparent protective layer around him and Su Luo.

"Bang, bang, bang——" Those shooting arrows ran into the transparent protective cover, tried to thrust in deeply, but could not move forward in the slightest.

Now, that protective transparent cover seemed to have been formed from many bright holes like a straw boat, as if specially made to catch the arrows.

Once the vulgar, middle-aged fellow saw this position, his expression immediately became exceptionally ugly, his anger directly exploding!

The Dragon Gang of the Eastern Sea had always run amuck on this sea and was feared. Now, were they being taught a lesson by these people? If they couldn't get back their face in this public place, how could they still live on the Eastern Sea?

"Brothers, add in more strength! There are only two people on the opponent's side. If we just spit and curse, we will be able to drown him! Everyone, don't get discouraged, continue to attack!" An imposing order to attack was issued without the slightest hesitation.

"It's poisoned." Su Luo pointed at those arrows that Nangong Liuyun had frozen around his body, her eyes were ice-cold as she indifferently said it.

The front of the arrow was emitting a faint fragrance. If you were hit by the arrow, the consequences would be too horrible to contemplate.

As an Elementary Apothecary, this kind of nine-tailed, red scorpion poison, Su Luo was still able to recognize.

Nangong Liuyun smiled faintly and was unconcerned about it. One could only see his sleeves roll over, brushing towards the front.

That movement was as casual as brushing away dust.

But his casual movement, with regards to the pirates encircling them, was actually fatal.

One could only see the arrows frozen by Nangong Liuyun's protective layer, unexpectedly, all of them turned around and ruthlessly shot towards where they came from.

It seemed as if these arrows had grown eyes, whoever launched it, it will shoot back towards them.

Under Nangong Liuyun's control, these arrows were as intense as a storm shower, an impossible force to resist.

“Swoosh, swoosh, swoosh— —”

The crashing sounds from piercing through the wind echoed in the air.

Immediately, a terrified and shocked expression appeared on all the faces of the pirates, each and every one of them was scared until they were dumbfounded. They simply could never have imagined that such a reversal that startled the heavens would occur like this.

## Chapter 495 – Life and death duel (2)

---

“Twing, thump, twing, thump—”

Just at the moment they were startled, the sound of arrow after arrow shooting into their flesh came in an unbroken succession.

“Ah, ah, ah—”

The pirates that were hit immediately screamed repeatedly, the cries of pain were non-stop and extremely tragic.

Originally, these pirates were still strutting around very arrogantly, but with a slight brush of Nangong Liuyun’s sleeves, all of their bodies were hit with arrows.

The lucky ones weakly toppled onto the deck, wailing in anguish again and again.

Some stood unsteadily and directly rolled into the ocean. In a split second, they were washed away by the sea until they were nowhere to be found.

Nangong Liuyun’s accuracy and control had simply reached perfection.

He didn’t let the arrow enter vital parts of their bodies, rather, he shot it into their arms, thighs and places where meat was thick with coarse skin.

If everyone thought that this was Nangong Liuyun being merciful and kind-hearted, being lenient with his actions, then they would be gravely mistaken.

The tip of the arrow was smeared with extremely toxic poison, the people that were shot were going to die anyway. Him shooting the arrows towards their non-vital parts was merely to let them suffer a little longer before dying, and nothing more.

Now, Nangong Liuyun was holding onto Su Luo, calmly standing in the middle of that narrow, hollow wood.

At this moment, his brocade robe danced lightly, he had a smiling expression like a handsome noble son in the troubled world, standing alone among this generation. He was so exceedingly refined, it was as if at any moment, he would be promoted to become an immortal.

He had a careless smile on his face, that was laid-back and as light as clouds and gentle as the wind, as if the surrounding tragic sight and desperate scene wasn't even the tiniest bit related to him.

Su Luo couldn't help but sigh secretly in her heart.

Those people that became the enemy of this man, how unfortunate could they be? This kind of Nangong Liuyun, who would dare to have him as an enemy?

"Is this stage show still fun to watch?" Nangong Liuyun bent over as he smilingly looked at Su Luo.

Killing people like cutting grass, wearing a smiling expression, and also saying that this was merely a staged show...Su Luo felt that compared to him, she didn't even have the demeanor of a killer.

"If Luo girl is still dissatisfied, then..." A shallow, unrestrained smile appeared on Nangong Liuyun's face, his beautiful eyes were brilliant and overflowing with color, as if he had again found something fun to play with.

Once these words were said, the people that were still alive on that boat was immediately scared pale.

Especially that middle-aged, vulgar fellow.

His martial arts cultivation, among this crowd of people, was considered the best, so when Nangong Liuyun reflected back those arrows, he was also the fastest to avoid them.

Not to mention before, he had pushed himself too much into the limelight. A bird that pokes its head out, gets shot, this reasoning, he hadn't understood since the beginning.

Just based on those few disgraceful sentences he said about Su Luo, how could Nangong Liuyun forgive him?

Nangong Liuyun naturally would attend to him the most.

Altogether, just counting the arrows alone that swiped by his body.

On his head, face, body and surroundings...every time, all the arrows swiped by, leaving behind a very small cut. It was not enough to take his life, but this kind of poison had a special trait— —

That it was itchy.

An unusual itch.

Now, this middle-aged vulgar fellow's entire head and face was swollen like a pig's head. Even that pair of eyes was also swollen beyond recognition.

“Spare our lives, noble swordsman, chivalrous female, it was our eyes that had failed to recognize Mount Tai. Breaking ground over the head of the god of the year, Tai Sui's, we beg you guys. Consider the fact that we are all poisoned, please spare us.”

Nangong Liuyun, relying on just one move, no, he didn't even need one move to make all of them despondent enough to spit out blood. How could little fries like them dare to contend against such strength? Perhaps even the boss wouldn't be able to use ten moves in the hands of this expert.

This person was simply too strong, didn't know from where he popped out from.

Nangong Liuyun merely swept them with an indifferent glance, he didn't even bat an eye.

That middle-aged vulgar fellow was also one who could read people, his ability to read someone's body language was not lacking, otherwise, it was unlikely for him to have crawled up to this position.

## Chapter 496 – Life and death duel (3)

---

One could see him endure the pain, with great difficulty kneeling towards Su Luo, and with a loud voice, begged for forgiveness: “Young lady, such a kind-hearted person, please just let us go. We will be grateful for your great kindness and favor for the rest of our lives. Begging you, begging you——”

At the same time, those hired thugs in the surroundings also dragged their bodies that were enduring the difficult itchiness, and all kneeled towards Su Luo to beg for forgiveness.

Su Luo merely looked at them indifferently, her expression unsympathetic.

If she really was merely a simple, kind-hearted, ignorant young lady from a rich residence, maybe she really would become soft-hearted from guilt because of them begging for forgiveness.

But that was not her.

Her previous incarnation had always lived in the secret, underworld, living a life on the edge of a knife and lapping up blood.

What was kind-hearted? What was merciful? She didn't know, it didn't exist in her dictionary. She only knew that if she didn't behead the grass at the roots, once the spring wind blew, it would live once again. She only knew to nip the problem in the bud, or else she would suffer harm.

Consequently, the corner of Su Luo's mouth only smiled, as she looked at these people who originally wanted to indifferently put them to death. She didn't even say half a sentence's worth to let them go.

The hearts of those pirates begging for forgiveness couldn't help but be secretly furious, cursing Su Luo as being vicious and merciless, not saving someone who was about to die in front of her.

Su Luo turned her gaze to look towards Nangong Liuyun with a ghost of a smile, and said: “Not pleading for leniency on their behalf, are you disappointed?”

Generally, didn't a man like a kind-hearted, little, white rabbit, a delicate Dodder flower? But she, on the other, had walked a contrary road.

Nangong Liuyun didn't speak, but with one pull, hugged Su Luo to his chest. His lips stuck up like a water caltrop, seemingly very satisfied with her response.

“This king likes just your kind.” Nangong Liuyun left a kiss on her cheek.

At this time, with everyone bitterly wailing and in anguish, crying to the heavens and rushing to the ground, it was something only Nangong Liuyun, this kind of talented person with no regards for others, could do.

Su Luo disgruntledly rolled her eyes at him.

Nangong Liuyun again seized the opportunity to steal a kiss.

Nangong Liuyun seemed to feel that bantering flirtatiously with Su Luo and being watched by these people was a type of blasphemy. With a careless wave of his hand, disdainful as if dispatching a housefly: “Get lost, get lost, get lost.”

These people were excited as if receiving a general pardon, each and every one of them hurriedly crawled up. People that weighed the anchor, weighed the anchor, the ones that steered the ship went to steer the ship, urging the ship to leave at flying speed.

Su Luo looked at Nangong Liuyun inquisitively.

With regards to her understanding of him, this man was accustomed to being petty, if there was a hatred, he must avenge it, he would also get it back at double the original. How could he let them go so easily?

As expected, Nangong Liuyun calmly nodded his head and said: “As for the Dragon Gang of the Eastern Sea? From now on, this name won't exist anymore.”

“What did you stealthily do again?” Su Luo's entire face was full of curiosity.

Just a moment ago, she was staring at Nangong Liuyun all along, but didn't find any clue. Her guess was merely based on her understanding of his nature.

Nangong Liuyun, in a spoiling manner, pinched the tip of Su Luo's nose, raised an eyebrow and smiled: "It's nothing, just merely smeared a little tracing drug on the tip of the arrows, that's all."

"Is this your plan to eliminate them in one stroke?"

"Yes." Nangong Liuyun faintly nodded his head: "The pirates of the Eastern Sea have successfully become big news, the Dragon Gang is the most outstanding among them. Their robbing friendly merchant ships is no longer a secret, normally, these ships appear like a God and vanish like a devil. If they encounter imperial troops, they escape very rapidly, therefore, the troops sent to suppress them have never succeeded."

Su Luo smilingly continued and added to his speech: "Who knew that these pirates would have a Heavenly road and refuse to walk it, and instead charged through the gates of hell. They just so happen to bump into your hand, it really could be said that God's eyes are wide open."

Su Luo said again with much regret: "It's a pity we need to rush back, otherwise, we could immediately send armed troops to suppress them."

"Again, why would it be so hard?" Nangong Liuyun's thumb and forefinger was placed at the edge of his lips, the alluring red lips blew out a strange sound, so sharp as to split the sky. It was transmitted very far.

## Chapter 497 – Life and death duel (4)

---

A black dot could be seen in the distance.

As it came closer, Su Luo noticed that it was a yacht. It was currently heading towards their current position at full speed.

“Heavens, it’s actually your luxurious yacht!” Su Luo finally recognized it. This was the luxurious yacht that had carried them to the Amethyst Thorned Island to catch Amethyst Thorned Fish that day.

Su Luo was looking at Nangong Liuyun mystically.

How could he have known that this luxurious yacht was nearby?

She felt as if there really wasn’t anything that would stump him, as long as she suggested it, he could accomplish it with a wave of his hand, easily and simply.

This man, in the end, how many more methods did he still have, how many more skills, that he hadn’t revealed? How many more mysterious things were still waiting for her to unearth?

The luxurious yacht just so happened to stop right in front of them. On the deck, Beichen Ying quickly jumped out, throwing himself towards Nangong Liuyun and Su Luo. He was so emotional that his eyes were nearly filled to the brim with tears of excitement.

“These days, where did you guys run off to! You guys almost worried us to death! We sailed the yacht everywhere in the nearby seas to look for you guys!” Beichen Ying hadn’t even physically arrived yet before loudly complaining and reproaching them.

Nangong Liuyun held onto Su Luo’s slender waist and quickly jumped to the top of the deck.

He indifferently swept Beichen Ying a glance, throwing down a sentence for

him without batting an eye: “Foolishly worrying about nothing.”

Beichen Ying stiffened his neck and humphed twice: “I know you have nine lives, so definitely not worried about you. We were worried about Sister-in-law! You don’t know, that day, we all fell into a trap, the only people remaining at the scene were Sister-on-law and Li Aotian, these two people. At that time, the more we thought, the more fearful we were and itching to fly up immediately. It was unfortunate that no matter what, we were unable to escape from the trap.”

Beichen Ying patted his chest from lingering fear.

They were definitely not fools, naturally, they could see Aotian and his sister’s enmity towards Su Luo.

With the few of them present, Li Aotian naturally wouldn’t dare do anything, but unfortunately, only Su Luo remained, so it was hard to fathom whether she would live or die.

Su Luo shallowly smiled: “Look here, aren’t I healthy and active? Don’t have even a bit of problem.”

“Just knew that Sister-in-law’s flood of good fortune fills the heavens, and the heavens help the worthy.” Beichen Ying foolishly smiled while stroking his head, “Oh, that’s right, all the people from the Li family are trying to find Li Aotian, has Sister-in-law seen him?”

Li Aotian?

This tragic man would always remain behind on the barren hill of the isolated island. Even his bones were swallowed up by the cave of flames until nothing was left, not even a little trace remained.

Su Luo’s complexion was calm and collected without a single ripple, her eyes turned back to gaze at Nangong Liuyun.

Nangong Liuyun shot a faint glance at Beichen Ying, not batting an eyelid, he said: “Since there is a person whose flood of good fortune fills the heavens, naturally, there is a person whose luck is bad through and through. Maybe he is buried beneath the ocean floor, who knows?”

Beichen Ying was immediately speechless.

Daring to speak this way about Li Aotian, very likely, there was only Nangong, this individual. If other people dared to speak this way, the Li family would have already pounced on them and beaten them up.

Su Luo spread out both hands and helplessly shrugged her shoulders: “At that time, the Amethyst Fish Palace was about to disappear, everyone looked after their own lives to escape, taking care of themselves was good enough. Who had the ability to care about others?”

Beichen Ying was being swayed by Nangong and Su Luo, these two big liars whose eyes didn't even blink. Immediately, he felt that what they said was reasonable and nodded in approval: “Precisely, everyone is responsible for their own life, whether Li Aotian is alive or dead has nothing to do with us.”

Nangong Liuyun had an expression as if teaching a child, and nodded his head: “These matters, you needn't care too much about.”

Beichen Ying smiled bitterly: “I also don't want to care about it, however, since Li Aotian disappeared, the Li family sent Li Yaoxiang over this time. It's not like you don't know that person's temperament, right?”

Li Yaoxiang, within the Li family's second generation, he was only second to Li Aotian's father's existence, at the peak of eighth rank in strength. His behavior was extremely haughty, arrogant and narrow-minded. He was also the most likely to cover up the Li family's mistakes.

## Chapter 498 – Life and death duel (5)

---

When Beichen Ying mentioned Li Yaoxiang, Nangong Liuyun merely frowned slightly and didn't give more of a response.

Seeing Su Luo, Beichen Ying was the happiest.

But before he could express his excitement, he was directly assigned a new task by Nangong Liuyun.

“What? Send forces to suppress pirates? And it is the Dragon Gang of the Eastern Sea?” Beichen Ying continued to shake his head, “No way, no way, those guys appear like the Gods and vanish like the devils, only Heaven knows which corner they are hiding in. By the time the armed forces appear, they have already fled and vanished without a trace earlier.”

Su Luo's eyes were bent like a half-moon, as she smilingly said: “This time, with Nangong Liuyun taking action, then I don't believe it will be that troublesome.”

“Second brother, you want to undertake this task?” Momentarily, Beichen Ying's eyes gave off a bright light, having a looking-forward-to-it expression.

“Not undertaking the task, rather, it's better to say have already taken action.” Nangong Liuyun tossed him a jade piece, “Now go.”

Once he heard these words, Beichen Ying was immediately all smiles.

The Dragon Gang of the Eastern Sea had never been razed even once by the imperial court, the riches it had hoarded, one could only imagine.

Normally, where they would withdraw to was unknown, so it was fine. But now, since they had Nangong Liuyun participating, naturally, it would be an instant win.

Beichen Ying put away the jade piece carefully, smiling towards Su Luo until you could only see the eyebrows and not the eye, revealed a mouthful of snow-

white teeth: “Sister-in-law should feel assured, if there are good stuff, I certainly will save it for you. I’ll wait until you return from an immediate victory to split the booty.”

“That’s naturally good.” Su Luo smilingly said to him.

The fastest way to accumulate wealth was not to earn it, but rather to plunder for it.

The Dragon Gang of the Eastern Sea had run amok and was feared for many years on the Eastern Sea, and was never razed once by the imperial court. One could well imagine its wealth, Su Luo nearly salivated just thinking about it.

Don’t blame her for being shortsighted, it was actually because she needed to activate that formation to get out, and after paying the expensive cost, she really was so poor as to not even have clanking sounds in her pockets.

Nangong Liuyun smilingly rubbed her head, with a tender voice. saying: “Let’s go.”

There were sufficient armed soldiers on the luxurious yacht. Nangong Liuyun handed all of them over to Beichen Ying, whereas he personally brought Su Luo over to a smaller, independent yacht stored in the hold of the luxurious yacht. He brought Su Luo on the journey home, rushing headlong back.

Eastern Ling Imperial Capital.

Today, the streets were much livelier than previous days. One after another, a crowd of people flocked to the largest fighting stadium in the middle of the city.

The second Miss and fourth Miss from the Great General Su’s residence was about to conduct a life-and-death duel, moreover, it was going to be today.

This kind of news was like injecting a dose of fresh blood into the ordinary, boring lives of the people in the capital. This suddenly made a lot of people impassioned.

Everyone continuously guessed: in the end, just what kind of hatred was there that would make two sisters have this kind of falling out?

There were people who favored Su Qing and would proclaim the argument that the poisonous Su Luo seduced Su Qing’s one true love.

“You guys are really too ill-informed and narrow-minded, not even knowing this? That Su Luo is a vixen, I heard she even seduced her own older sister’s future husband.”

“That’s right! She is still a girl birthed by a concubine. Normally, she is also a good-for-nothing waste, she has no honor or shame, to actually go seduce her older sister’s future husband. She simply doesn’t have any self-awareness, too shameless.”

“Right, otherwise, how could Su Qing, in a fit of fury, raise the matter of a life-and-death duel? It was because she was completely infuriated.”

“If I were to have this kind of younger sister, I would choke her to death at the earliest opportunity and be done with it, to avoid being set up by her in the future.”

These irresponsible rumors spread faster than the speed of wind, very quickly, everyone in the city knew about it.

But, it was also not everyone would follow the opinion of the majority, there were some clear-headed people.

“Too laughable, since Su Luo herself is a love-struck fool and a good-for-nothing waste, then how could she seduce her older sister’s in-name-only, future husband? Is that older sister’s future husband a blind person? Since he is blind, then how could Su Qing’s kind of ice beauty even be interested?”

## Chapter 499 – Life and death duel (6)

---

“No matter how you say it, they are always talking about the future brother-in-law. In the end, who is that man? Having the ability to make Su Qing fall for him, he shouldn’t be an ordinary person.”

“I heard it was His Highness Prince Jin.”

“Pfft— that is even more hilarious. Su Qing prostrating herself before His Highness Prince Jin, this I believe, but how could His Highness Prince Jin possibly fancy Su Qing? Isn’t that just nonsense?”

“Precisely ah, there are even more outrageous sayings. There have even been rumors that the good-for-nothing trash Su Luo from the Su family snatched His Highness Prince Jin from Su Qing’s hands.”

“Pfft ha ha ha— I am dying from laughter. Let’s not mention the good-for-nothing Su Luo, even Su Qing herself, what qualifications does she have to be fancied by His Highness Prince Jin? Even going so far as boasting that His Highness Prince Jin is her true love? Who the hell does she think she is?!”

The above-mentioned were actually from the Anti Su Qing camp.

Due to the controversy, there were many people who paid close attention to the duel as a result.

As a result of one round after another of hype, today’s duel to the death had simply reached the extent where it was bursting with activity with a turnout that included the entire capital.

The Imperial Capital had an enormous fighting stadium sufficient to accommodate a hundred thousand people.

There were many areas on the fighting stage, but in the most central area there now stood a female in a blazing red skirt.

One could see she had an exquisite and extremely beautiful appearance with a complexion as clear and cold as a lotus. With her standing on stage, even her surroundings appeared to have been cooled down by a few degrees.

Su Qing stood on stage, so she heard the comments from the audience below.

In the beginning, the public opinion was favorable towards her, with many criticizing Su Luo. She listened with a calm and collected complexion. Not a single ripple disturbed Su Qing's expression, but her heart was delighted from beginning to end.

However, she didn't know since when, the direction of public opinion started to gradually change.

A few opinions unfavorable towards her started to appear, mostly mocking her wishful thinking with regards to His Highness Prince Jin.

This was precisely the sharpest thorn buried deepest in Su Qing's heart. Having it pointed out and laid bare by people like this made her suffer more pain than simply just killing her.

Standing on top of the really high and enormous fighting stage, Su Qing clenched both her hands into fists. Her complexion condensed into a cold and arrogant expression. She continuously mouthing Su Luo's name in her heart, accompanied by the sinister hatred in her eyes.

Time gradually passed, but Su Luo still hadn't arrived.

The spectators under the stage who wanted to see a good play immediately become unhappy. One after another, they yelled at the top of their throats:

"What's going on? Wasn't it said there will be a duel to the death? It's almost time, where is the other person?"

"Exactly ah, we had to arrive early in the morning in order to grab good seats. Do you think it was easy? Are they playing with us?"

"Don't tell me Su Luo became scared at the last moment and did not dare to come, huh? Hey, this is really too embarrassing, right?"

"If she was afraid, then she shouldn't have agreed; since she has agreed, she shouldn't be afraid. The character of Su Manor's fourth Miss is too lacking,

right? No wonder she could do something nauseating like stealing her older sister's future husband."

Everyone in the audience were discussing this spiritedly, but Lan Xuan was so anxious his forehead started to give off sweat.

Beichen and Anye were searching for them on the ocean, but his luck wasn't as good. His assignment was to reverse the direction of the public opinion: to create a fair, auspicious, and peaceful environment in the battle arena for sister-in-law.

His suppression of Su Qing's stratagems had just started to show some results. Nevertheless, who could have imagined that the time for the duel was quickly approaching, yet sister-in-law still had not arrived.

Public opinion was a small matter, but sister-in-law's safety was a major concern.

If she had truly met with mishap, very likely a huge problem had occurred on Nangong's side..... Lan Xuan irritability pulled at his hair. He somewhat worriedly stood up to look in all directions.

"Young master, this.....do we still continue?" Lan Xu, Lan Xuan's loyal and devoted subordinate, respectfully bowed and asked.

Lan Xuan recalled Anye Ming's instruction from that day: it did not matter if sister-in-law showed up or not, he must continue to reverse the public opinion for her.

Recalling up to that point, Lan Xuan twitchily waved his hand: "Continue."

# Chapter 500 – Life and death duel (7)

---

The time for the decisive battle drew nearer by minutes and seconds.

But what nobody could imagine was that even now, Su Luo still hadn't arrived yet.

On the fighting stage, the corner of Su Qing's mouth hooked up slightly, tilting up into a ridiculing sneer.

“Su Luo, are you afraid? Afraid to come, right? Being like this, how are you fit to be with His Highness Prince Jin? Why would he be so good to you? You don't deserve it! Don't deserve it!”

Su Qing's deep, cold eyes dropped down slightly as she stood on the marble fighting stage made up of huge boulders, unmoving and silently laughing in her heart.

If Su Luo didn't show up, not only did it imply that she was a coward, but at the same time, her name would be on the most wanted list in the mainland. Then, from this day forth, she would never have a peaceful day.

Everyone on the mainland worshipped the strong and would always look down upon cowards for a lifetime.

Therefore, there was a rule, not daring to attend your life-and-death duel, your name would immediately be placed on the list of most wanted with a very high reward money offered. Also, everyone would kill her.

Therefore...Su Luo, today, you appearing is death, not appearing is also death!

Su Qing's cold eyes hung down, a sinister and cruel radiance flashing through them.

Meanwhile, in a private room on the second floor of the fighting arena, the door was closed tightly.

An extremely beautiful woman that was above the common people sat upright like a queen. Her pair of eyes unblinkingly stared at the empty fighting stage below with an enigmatic expression. Nobody could see clearly what she was thinking about.

A screened hat was placed quietly at her right hand side. This screened hat could only cover half of a person, it was just like her expression, pitch-black as ink.

The audience under the stage was spiritedly discussing away, regardless of how Lan Xuan's people tried to pacify the rowdy crowd, but without Su Luo's appearance, these people felt as if they were being fooled. Immediately, they were angry against a common enemy and unprecedentedly united as one.

Lan Xuan pressed down on his temple that was throbbing non-stop. He bitterly smiled inside his heart, if at this moment, Sister-in-law is again unwell, maybe this matter would not end well.

"There is still the final three minutes left, but our other duelist has not appeared at all." The judges walked onto the fighting stage with eyes gazing off in the distance in all four directions, indifferently saying: "As everyone knows, no matter what kind of reason, after signing a life-and-death contract and not going onto the life-and-death stage, from now on, she will inevitably suffer attacks from the experts of the entire continent."

The judge paused and another minute passed.

The final two minutes."

In the wake of the judge's words, immediately, all the tongues of the people at the scene started to wag.

"Not true right? That Miss Su really doesn't dare to come?"

"Precisely, she actually turned out to be a coward. Originally, I heard that this Miss, on the surface, was a good-for-nothing, but had actually hidden her strength under a bushel to secretly cultivate. I thought she was going to be a great person, never expected this..."

"That's right, originally, I also thought highly of and supported this Su Luo. I just wanted to see the play of a concubine daughter's counterattack. Who would

have imagined that she simply won't dare to even appear."

The judge's indifferent voice once again echoed out: "The last minute."

Momentarily, everyone settled down. With rapt attention, they held their breath, unmoving and waiting for the arrival of the last second.

Tick tock, tick tock, tick tock, tick tock...

Nobody ever felt until now how very slowly the time could pass. It was so slow as if the entire world had stop rotating around.

"Ten, nine, eight, seven..." Now, everyone was all counting down in their hearts, with their hearts full of all kinds of stirred up moods.

In the wake of the sound of the audience counting down the time.

In the private room on the second floor, this exceedingly refined, extremely beautiful woman's mouth slowly hooked up into a smiling expression. Her smile was beautiful like a blooming summer flower.

The sneer at the corner of her mouth became increasingly distinct: Su Luo, never imagined defeating you this easily, really doesn't give a person a feeling of accomplishment.

But, very quickly, the smile, in a flash, became rigid at the corner of her mouth. Her entire person seemed to have all the acupuncture points pushed to a stop, back so stiff that she almost couldn't budge.